



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

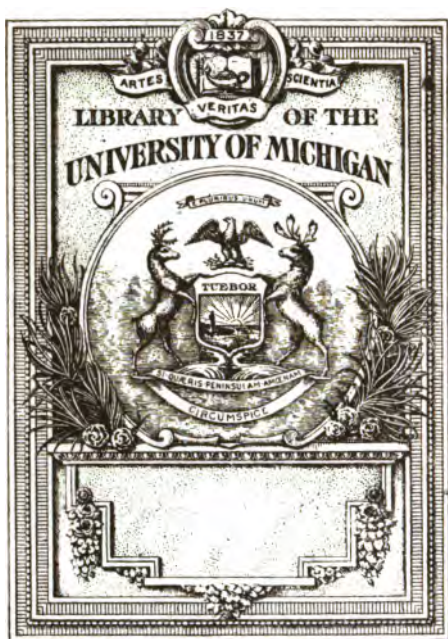
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



THIS BOOK
FORMS PART OF THE
ORIGINAL LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
BOUGHT IN EUROPE
1838 TO 1839
BY
ASA GRAY

BT
1006
.B31

7-89

E L E M E N T S

O F

362

M O R A L S C I E N C E .

BY JAMES BEATTIE, LL.D.

PROFESSOR OF MORAL PHILOSOPHY AND LOGICK IN
MARISCHAL COLLEGE, ABERDEEN.

THE FIRST VOLUME.

EDINBURGH:

PRINTED FOR T. CADELL, LONDON; and
WILLIAM CREECH, EDINBURGH.

MDCCXC.

B
1403
B53
E5
1790

ADVERTISEMENT.

THESE Volumes contain an Abridgement, and for the most part a very brief one, of a series of Discourses, delivered in Marischal College, on Moral Philosophy and Logic.

It has long been the author's practice, with a view to assist the memory of his hearers, to make them write *Notes* of each discourse. But as that was necessarily done in haste, inaccuracy was unavoidable: and many of them have expressed their wishes that he would put it in their power to procure correct copies of the whole Summary, a little enlarged in the doctrinal parts, and with the addition of a few illustrative examples. This is one of his motives to the present Publication; which some are pleased to think has been too long delayed: and which is become the more excusable, as hundreds of manuscript copies of the *Notes*, many of them incomplete as well as

a 2

incorrect,

incorrect, are now extant ; and as several extracts from them have got, he knows not how, into print, with more imperfections, it may be, than could reasonably be imputed to the author. He begs leave to add, as another reason for making these papers public, that he has been advised to it by many persons, whose judgement and love of good learning intitle them at all times to his most respectful attention.

It will no doubt be observed, that some of the following topics, though brevity has been aimed at in all, are treated more compendiously than others. This could, he thinks, be accounted for ; but not without much egotism, and a detail of particulars neither necessary nor interesting.

No body, he presumes, will be offended, if in these papers there be found, as there certainly will, numberless thoughts and arguments which may be found elsewhere. It will be considered, that, as a professor's province is generally assigned him by public authority, his business is rather to collect and arrange his materials, than to invent or make them. In his *illustrations,*

ADVERTISEMENT.

illustrations, in order to render what he teaches as perspicuous and entertaining as possible, he may give ample scope to his inventive powers : but, in preparing a *summary* of his principles, he will be more solicitous to make a collection of useful truths, however old, than to amuse his readers with paradox, and theories of his own contrivance.—And let it be considered further, that, as all the practical, and most of the speculative, parts of Moral Science, have been frequently and fully explained by the ablest writers, he would, if he should affect novelty in these matters, neither do justice to his subject, nor easily clear himself from the charge of ostentation.

Of such of the author's Lectures as have already, under the name of *Essays*, been published in the same form in which they were at first composed, particularly those on Language, Memory, and Imagination, he has made this abridgement as brief as was consistent with any degree of perspicuity. Some may think, that he ought to have left out those parts ; and he once thought

thought so himself. But it occurred to him, that many persons, into whose hands this book would perhaps come, may have never seen those printed lectures, and possibly never would see them ;—that he could not with a good grace recommend it to any body to purchase the volumes in which they are to be found ;—and that, if those parts should be wholly omitted, his System, as exhibited in this epitome, would have a mutilated appearance, and be still more imperfect than it is.

The remaining part of this work, containing ELEMENTS OF MORAL PHILOSOPHY (strictly so called), which comprehends ETHICS, ECONOMICS, and POLITICS ; and of LOGIC (including RHETORIC) ; will be put to the press, as soon as the author shall have found leisure to revise and transcribe it.

Con-

Contents of the First Volume.

INTRODUCTION, - - ix

PART FIRST.

PSYCHOLOGY.

CHAP. I.

Perceptive Faculties.

	Pag.
Sect. 1. <i>Some words explained,</i> -	4
Sect. 2. <i>The faculty of Speech,</i> -	13
Sect. 3. <i>Essentials of Language,</i>	35
Sect. 4. <i>External Sensation. Tasting,</i>	
<i>Smell, &c.</i> -	72
Sect. 5. <i>Consciousness,</i> - -	87
Sect. 6. <i>Memory,</i> - -	90
Sect. 7. <i>Imagination,</i> - -	103
Sect. 8. <i>Dreaming,</i> - -	120
Sect. 9. <i>Secondary Sensations,</i> -	126
Sect. 10. <i>Sympathy,</i> - -	171
Sect. 11. <i>Taste,</i> - -	181

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Active Powers.

	Pag.
Sect. 1. <i>Free Agency,</i> - -	194
Sect. 2. <i>Remarks on the Will,</i> -	214
Sect. 3. <i>Principles of Action,</i> -	220
Sect. 4. <i>The Subject continued. Passions and Affections,</i>	235
Sect. 5. <i>Passions and Affections,</i>	255
Sect. 6. <i>Passions and Affections,</i>	344
Sect. 7. <i>Of the Passions as they display themselves in the look and gesture,</i> - -	354

PART SECOND.

NATURAL THEOLOGY.

Introduction, - - -	373
---------------------	-----

CHAP. I.

Of the Divine Existence, -	379
----------------------------	-----

CHAP. II.

Of the Divine Attributes, -	393
-----------------------------	-----

APPENDIX.

<i>Of the Incorporeal Nature of the Soul,</i>	404
<i>Of the Immortality of the Soul,</i> -	414

I N-

E L E M E N T S O F M O R A L S C I E N C E.

PART FIRST.

PSYCHOLOGY.

9. **T**HIS science explains the nature of the several powers or faculties of the human mind. By the *faculties* of the mind, I understand those capacities which it has of exerting itself in perceiving, thinking, remembering, imagining, &c.; and by the *mind* itself, or *soul*, or *spirit**,

* These words are not strictly synonymous; but it is needless to be more explicit in this place.

A

of

of man, I mean that part of the human constitution which is capable of perceiving, thinking, and beginning motion, and without which our body would be a senseless, motionless, and lifeless thing. These faculties were long ago divided into those of PERCEPTION and those of VOLITION; and the division, though not accurate, may be adopted here. By the perceptive powers we are supposed to acquire knowledge; and by the powers of volition, or will, we are said to exert ourselves in action.

CHAPTER I.

THE PERCEPTIVE FACULTIES.

10. **T**Hese may perhaps be reduced to nine. 1. External Sensation, by which we acquire the knowledge of bodies and their qualities. 2. Consciousness, by which

which we attend to the thoughts of our minds; and which is also called Reflection.

3. Memory. 4. Imagination. 5. Dreaming.

6. The faculty of speech, whereby we discover what is passing in the minds of one another.

7. Abstraction, a thing to be explained by and by. 8. Reason, judgement, or understanding, by which

we perceive the difference between truth and falsehood.

9. Conscience, or the Moral Faculty, whereby we distinguish between virtue and vice, between what ought to be done and what ought not to be

done.

11. Whether this distribution of our perceptive powers be accurate, or sufficiently comprehensive, will perhaps appear afterwards; at present we need not stop to inquire. I shall consider them, not in the order in which I have just now named them, but in that order that shall seem the most convenient. And I begin with the faculty of speech: that subject being connected with some others that my hearers are already acquainted with; and therefore likely to be attended with little difficulty,

even to those who are not much accustomed to abstract inquiry; to which it will, for that reason, serve as a proper and easy introduction. But, before I proceed to it, a few remarks must be premised for the purpose of explaining some words which will frequently occur in the course of these inquiries.

SECTION I.

Some words explained.

12. **T**HAT we exist, and are continually employed about a variety of things, is certain and self-evident. Sometimes we perceive things themselves; and this happens when they are so far present with us as to affect our organs or powers of sensation: thus we just now perceive light, and the other things around us. Sometimes we think of things when they are not in this sense present with us. Thus at midnight, or when our eyes are shut, we can think

think of sight, and the other things we have seen or heard during the day. When we thus think of that which we do not perceive, that is, which does not affect our powers of sensation or perception, we are said, in the language of modern philosophy, to have an *idea* or a *notion* of it: *Habere notionem rei alicujus*, is a Latin phrase of like import.

13. The word *idea* has been applied to many purposes; and, from the inaccurate manner in which some writers have used it, has proved the occasion of many errors. It has been used to denote *opinion*, as when we speak of the *ideas* of Aristotle, meaning his opinions or doctrines: but this sense of the word is rather French than English. Sometimes it means one's particular way of conceiving or comprehending a thing; as when we say, The Epicurean philosophy, according to Cicero's *idea* of it, was very unfriendly to virtue. It was long used to signify an imaginary thing, by the intervention of which we were supposed to perceive external things, or bodies. For many ancient and modern philosophers fancied,

fancied, that the soul could perceive nothing but what was contiguous to it, or in the same place with it; and, as the bodies we perceive *without* us are not in the same place with the soul, (for, if they were, they would all be *within* the human body), it was said that we did not perceive those bodies themselves, but only *ideas* or unsubstantial images of them, which proceeded from them, and, penetrating the human body, might be in the same place with the soul, or contiguous to it. All this is not only fiction, but unintelligible.

x We perceive *bodies themselves*; and can as easily understand how the soul should perceive what is distant, as how it should perceive what is contiguous or near.

14. In the Platonick, and perhaps too in the Pythagorean philosophy, *ideas* are those external, self-existent, and uncreated models, prototypes, or patterns, according to which the Deity made all things of an eternal and uncreated matter; and which, while he employs himself in creation, he continually *looks upon*: whence it is supposed that the word *idea* (from *eiden* to see, or behold)

behold) is derived. Cicero gives two Latin terms corresponding to *idea*, in this sense of the word; and those are *species* and *forma*. The first (derived from the old Latin verb *Specio*, I behold) is more according to analogy; but is inconvenient, because those oblique cases in the plural *specierum* and *speciebus* cannot be admitted into good Latin; and therefore our author prefers the other word *forma*, to whose plural cases there can be no objection. Of these self-existent ideas Plato was, as Cicero says, marvellously fond; supposing that there was something divine in their nature. The word *idea*, in this sense of it, we shall not often have occasion to repeat.

15. The same word has still another meaning among philosophers; having been used to denote a thought of the mind, which may be expressed by a general term, or common appellative, that is, by a noun which is not a proper name. The words *man*, *horse*, *mountain*, &c. are significant of *ideas* in this sense of the term, and are general names or common appellatives, because they belong equally to every man;
every

every horse, every mountain. That this may be the better understood, and in order to prepare my hearers for some things that will immediately follow, it is proper to introduce here a few remarks on that faculty of our nature, which some have called abstraction, or the power of forming general ideas by arranging things in classes; a faculty, which the brutes probably have not, and without which both language and science would be impossible.

16. All the things in nature are *individual* things: that is, every thing is itself and one, and not another or more than one. But when a number of individual things are observed to resemble each other in one or more particulars of importance, we refer them to a class, tribe, or *species*, to which we give a name; and this name belongs equally to every thing comprehended in the species. Thus, all animals of a certain form resemble each other in having four feet; and therefore we consider them as in this respect of the same species, to which we give the name *quadruped*; and this name belongs equally to every individual

individual of the species; from the elephant, one of the greatest, to the mouse, one of the least.

17. Again, Observing several species to resemble each other in one or more particulars of importance, we refer them to a higher class, called a *genus*, to which we give a name; which name belongs equally to every species comprehended in the genus, and to every individual comprehended in the several species. Thus all the tribes of living things resemble each other in this respect, that they have life; whence we refer them to a *genus* called *animal*; and this name belongs equally to every *species* of animals, to men, beasts, fishes, fowls, and insects, and to each *individual* man, beast, fish, fowl, and insect.

18. Further, All things animated and inanimate resemble each other in this respect, that they are created; whence we refer them to a genus still higher, which may be called *creature*: a name which belongs equally to every *genus* and *species* of created things, and to each *individual* thing that is created. Further still, All beings

B

whatever

whatever exist, or *are*, and in this respect may be said to resemble each other: in which view we refer them to a genus still higher, called *Being*, which is the highest possible genus,

19. The English word *kind* is said to have been originally of the same import with *genus*, and *sort* the same with *species*. But the words *kind* and *sort* have long been confounded by our best writers; and hence, when we would speak accurately on this subject, we are obliged to take the words *genus* and *species* from another language. All those thoughts or conceptions of the mind, which we express by names significant of *genera* and *species*, may be called *General Ideas*, and have been by some philosophers called *Ideas* simply. And those thoughts or conceptions, which we express by proper names, or by general names so qualified by pronouns as to denote individual things or persons, may be called *Singular* or *Particular Ideas*, and were by some English writers of the last century termed *Notions*. In this sense of the words, one has a *notion* of *Socrates*, *Etna*, *this town*,

town, that house; and an *idea* of *man, mountain, house, town*. It were to be wished, that the words *idea* and *notion* had been still thus distinguished; but they have long been applied to other purposes. And now *idea* seems to express a clearer, and *notion* a fainter, conception.

20. Of the manner in which the mind forms general ideas, so much has been said by metaphysical writers, that without great expence of time, not even an abridgement of it could be given: and I apprehend it would not be easy to make such an abridgement useful, or even intelligible. It appears to me, that, as all things are individuals, all thoughts must be so too. A thought therefore is still but one thought; and cannot, as such, have that universality in its appearance, which a general term has in its signification. In short, as I understand the words, to have general ideas, or general conceptions, is nothing more, than to know the meaning and use of general terms, or common appellatives. Proper names occur in language much more seldom than general terms. And there-

fore, if we had not this faculty of arranging things according to their *genera* and *species*, general terms would not be understood, and consequently language (as already observed) would be impossible.

21. There is another sort of abstraction, which affects both our thinking and our speaking; and takes place, when we consider any quality of a thing separately from the thing itself, and speak and think of it as if it were itself a thing, and capable of being characterised by qualities. Thus from *beautiful animal*, *moving animal*, *cruel animal*, separate the qualities, and make nouns of them, and they become *beauty*, *motion*, *cruelty*; which are called in grammar *abstract nouns*; and which, as if they stood for real things, may be characterised by qualities, *great beauty*, *swift motion*, *barbarous cruelty*. These qualities, too, may be abstracted and changed into nouns, *greatness*, *swiftness*, *barbarity*, &c. Of these abstract nouns there are multitudes in every language.

SECT.

S E C T. II.

Of the Faculty of Speech.

22. **T**HE philosophy of speech is an important and curious part of science. In treating of it, I shall, first, explain the origin and general nature of speech; and, secondly, consider the Essentials of Language, by showing how many sorts of words are necessary for expressing all the varieties of human thought, and what is the nature and use of each particular sort.

ORIGIN AND GENERAL NATURE OF SPEECH.

23. **M**AN is the only animal that can speak. For speech implies the arrangement and separation of our thoughts; and this is the work of reason and reflection. Articulate sounds resembling speech may be uttered by parrots, by ravens, and even by machines;

machines; but this is not speech, because it implies neither reflection, nor reason, nor any separation of successive thoughts; because, in a word, the machine or parrot does not, and cannot, understand the meaning of what it is thus made to utter.

24. The *natural* voices of brute animals are not, however, without meaning. But they differ from speech in these three respects. First, Man speaks by art and imitation; whereas brutes utter their voices without being taught, that is, by the instinct of their nature. Secondly, The voices of brutes are not separable into simple elementary sounds, as the speech of man is; nor do they admit of that amazing variety whereof our articulate voices are susceptible. And, thirdly, They seem to express, not separate thoughts or ideas, but such feelings, pleasant or painful, as it may be necessary, for the good of those animals, or for the benefit of man, that they should have the power of uttering.

25. We learn to speak, by imitating the speech of others; so that he who is born quite deaf, and continues so, must of necessity

cessity be dumb. Instances there have been of persons, who had heard in the beginning of life and afterwards became deaf, using a strange sort of language, made up partly of words they had learned, and partly of other words they had invented. Such persons could guess at the meaning of what was spoken to them in their own dialect, by looking the speaker in the face, and observing the lips, and those other parts of the face, which are put in motion by speaking.

26. We speak, in order to make our thoughts known to others. Now thoughts themselves are not visible, nor can they be perceived by any outward sense. If therefore I make my thoughts perceptible to another man, it must be by means of signs, which he and I understand in the same sense. The signs, that express human thought so as to make it known to others, are of two sorts, Natural and Artificial.

27. The Natural Signs of thought are those outward appearances in the eyes, complexion, features, gesture, and voice, which accompany certain emotions of the
mind,

mind, and which, being common to all men, are universally understood. For example, uplifted hands and eyes, with bended knees, are in every part of the world known to signify earnest entreaty; fiery eyes, wrinkled brows, quick motions, and loud voice, betoken anger; paleness and trembling are signs of fear, tears of sorrow, laughter of merriment, &c. Compared with the multitude of our thoughts, these natural signs are but few, and therefore insufficient for the purposes of speech. Hence Artificial Signs have been universally adopted, which derive their meaning from human contrivance, and are not understood except by those who have been taught the use of them.

28. These artificial signs may be divided into Visible and Audible. The former are used by dumb men; by ships that sail in company; and sometimes by people at land, who, by means of fire and other signals, communicate intelligence from one place to another: but for the ordinary purposes of life such contrivances would be inconvenient and insufficient. And therefore

fore audible signs, performed by the human voice, are in all nations used in order to communicate thought. For the human voice has an endless variety of expression, and is in all its varieties easily managed, and distinctly perceptible by the human ear, in darkness, as well as in light.

29. Human voice is air sent out from the lungs, and by the windpipe conveyed through the aperture of the larynx, where the breath operates upon the membranous lips of that aperture, so as to produce distinct and audible sound; in a way resembling that in which the lips of the reed of a hautboy produce musical sound when one blows into them. We may indeed breathe strongly, without uttering what is called voice: and, in order to transform our breath into vocal sound, it seems necessary, that, by an act of our will, which long practice has rendered habitual, we should convey a sort of tenseness to the parts through which the breath passes. New-born infants do this instinctively; which changes their breathing, when stronger than usual, into crying. And

C

persons

persons in great pain do the same ; which transforms their breathing into groans.

30. The aperture of the larynx is called the *glottis*, and, when we swallow food or drink, is covered with a lid called the *epiglottis*. As our voice rises in its tone, the glottis becomes narrower, and wider as the voice becomes more grave or deep. Now any ordinary human voice may sound a great variety of tones ; and each variety of tone is occasioned by a variation in the diameter of the glottis. And therefore, the muscles and fibres, that minister to the motion of these parts, must be exceedingly minute and delicate.

31. One may use one's voice without articulation ; as when one sings a tune without applying syllables to it : in which case the vocal organs perform no other part than that of a wind instrument of music. But speech is made up of *articulate voices* : and articulation is performed by those parts of the throat and mouth, which the voice passes through in its way from the larynx to the open air ; namely, by the tongue, palate, throat, lips, and nostrils.

nostrils. Speech is articulated voice : whispering is articulated breath.

32. Of vocal articulate sounds the simplest are those which proceed through an open mouth, and which are called Vowel Sounds. In transmitting these, the opening of the mouth may be pretty large, or somewhat smaller, or very small ; and thus three different vowel sounds may be formed, each of which may admit of three varieties, according as the voice, in its passage through the inside of the mouth, is acted upon by the lips, the tongue, or the throat. In this way, nine simple vowel sounds may be produced. There are ten in the English tongue, though we have not a vowel letter for each. Indeed our alphabet of vowels is very imperfect. In other languages there may be vowel sounds different from any we have : that of the French *u* is one.

33. When the voice in its passage thro' the mouth is *totally intercepted* by the articulating organs coming together, or *strongly compressed* by their near approach to one another, there is formed another sort of

C 2 articulation,

articulation, which in writing is marked by a character called a consonant. Now silence is the effect of a total interception of the voice, and indistinctness of sound is produced by a strong compression of it. And therefore a consonant can have no distinct sound, unless it be preceded or followed by a vowel, or opening of the mouth.

34. The variety of consonants, formed by a total interception of the voice, may be thus accounted for. The voice, in its passage through the inside of the mouth, may be *totally intercepted* by the lips, or by the tongue and palate, or by the tongue and throat; and each of these interceptions may happen, when the voice is directed to go out by the mouth only, or by the nose only, or partly by the mouth and partly by the nose. In this way we form nine primitive consonants; which are divided into Mutes, P, T, K; Semimutes, B, D, and G as founded in *egg*; and Semivowels, M, N, and that sound of NG which is heard in *king*, and which, though we mark it by two letters, is as simple a sound as any other. The Mutes are so called, because

because their sound instantly and totally ceases on bringing the organs together; the Semimutes, because a little faint sound is heard in the nostrils, or roof of the mouth, after the organs intercept the voice; and the Semivowels, because their sound, escaping through the nostrils, may be continued for a considerable time after the voice is intercepted.

35. When the voice, directed to go out by the mouth only, or by the mouth and nose jointly, is not totally intercepted, but *strongly compressed*, in its passage, there is formed another class of consonants, which are the aspirations of the mutes and semimutes. Thus P is changed into F; B into V; T into that sound of TH which is heard in *thing*; D into that sound of TH which is heard in *this, that, thine*. The Semivowels do not admit of aspiration, or at least are not aspirated in our language. And we have some irregular consonants, that cannot be accounted for according to this mode of arrangement, as L and R, S, and SH; and in other tongues there may be

be consonant as well as vowel sounds, with which we are not acquainted.

36. In English the simple elementary sounds are thirty-two or thirty-three ; namely, ten vowels, and twenty-two or twenty-three consonants. Our alphabet, therefore, if it were perfect, would consist of thirty-two or thirty-three letters. But, like other alphabets, it is imperfect, having several unnecessary letters, and wanting some which it ought to have. Our spelling is equally imperfect ; for many of our words have letters which are not sounded at all ; and the same letter has not in every word the same sound. Hence some ingenious men have thought of reforming our alphabet, by introducing new letters ; and our spelling, by striking off such as are unnecessary, and writing as we speak. But both schemes are unwise, because they would involve our laws and literature in confusion ; and impracticable, because pronunciation is liable to change, and no two provinces in the British empire have exactly the same pronunciation.

37. By

37. By attending to those motions of the articulating organs, whereby the elementary sounds of speech are formed, an art has been invented, of teaching those to speak who do not hear. But it is most laborious, and by no means useful; for the articulation of such persons is so uncouth, as to give horror rather than pleasure to the hearer. The time, therefore, that is employed in this study, might be laid out to better purpose, in teaching those unfortunate persons the use of written language, the art of drawing, and a convenient system of visible signs for the communication of thought. Every necessary letter of the alphabet might be signified by pointing to a certain joint of the fingers, or to some other part of the hand; and the more common words, by other visible signs of the same nature: and such a contrivance, when a dumb man becomes expert in it, and has learned to read and spell, would be of very great use to him.

38. By combining consonants with consonants, and with vowels and diphthongs,

thongs, an endless variety of syllables, and consequently of words, may be formed. In English, exclusive of proper names and of words derived from them, the number of words does not amount to fifty thousand; but most of them have several and some of them many significations. Two vowels coalescing in one syllable, so as to form a double vowel sound, make what is called a diphthong, as *ou* in *round*, *ui* in *juice*; and sometimes a diphthongal sound is expressed by a single vowel letter, as *u* in *muse*, *i* in *mind*, and sometimes by three vowel letters, as *eau* in *beauty*, *ieu* in *lieu*.

39. As much speech as we pronounce with one effort of the articulating organs, is called a Syllable. It may be, a single vowel, as, *a*, *o*; or a diphthong, as *oi*; or either of these modified by one, or more consonants, placed before it, or after it, or on both sides of it; as *to*, *of*, *toy*, *oyl*, *top*, *cup*, *boil*, *broils*, *swift*, *strength*, &c. The least part of language that has a meaning is a word; and words derive their meaning from common use: and it is both

both our interest and our duty, to use them in the common acceptation.

40. Some words are long, and others short. Those that are in continual use, as articles, pronouns, auxiliary words, prepositions, and conjunctions, ought to be short, and generally are so. Primitive words are in most languages short; which proves, that those authors are mistaken who affirm, on the authority of some travellers, that barbarous languages abound in long words. Such travellers probably mistook a description or circumlocution for a single word; and as the voice in speaking does not make a pause at the end of each word, it is not unnatural for those, who hear what they do not understand, to mistake two or more successive words for one. Short words do not make style inharmonious, or insipid, unless they be in themselves harsh, or of little meaning.

41. Words alone do not constitute speech: *Emphasis* and *Accent* belong to all languages. The former is of two sorts; the emphasis of words, and the emphasis of syllables. The first is a stronger exer-

D

tion

tion of the voice laid upon some words, in order to distinguish the more significant parts of a sentence. The last is an energy of the voice laid upon some syllables of a word more than upon others, because custom has so determined.

42. The first, which may be called the rhetorical emphasis, is necessary to make spoken language perfectly intelligible. For if the speaker or reader misapply the emphasis, by laying the force of his voice upon the less significant, or not laying it on the more significant, words, the hearer must in many cases mistake the meaning. And no person in reading can apply the emphasis properly, unless he read slowly, be continually attentive, and understand the full import of every word he utters. Children therefore, while learning to read, ought to read nothing but what they perfectly understand. The emphasis of speech is by most grammarians called *accent*; but accent is quite a different thing.

43. Accent is the *tone* with which one speaks. For, in speaking, the voice of every man is sometimes more grave in the sound,

found, and at other times more acute or shrill. Accent is related to music or song; as appears in the formation of the Latin word, from *ad* and *cantus*, and in that of the correspondent Greek term *προσῳδία*, from *προς* and *ᾠδή*. Many people are insensible of the tone with which themselves and their neighbours speak; but all perceive the tone of a stranger who comes from a considerable distance: and if his tone seem in any degree uncouth or unpleasant to them, theirs it is likely is equally so to him. This at least is true of provincial accents. That accent, and that pronunciation, is generally in every country accounted the best, which is used in the metropolis by the most polite and learned persons.

44. The Greeks used in writing certain marks called accents, in order to make the tones of their language of more easy acquisition to foreigners: and those still remain in their books; but we can make no use of them, because we know not in what way they regulated the voice. Every language, and almost every provincial dialect,

is distinguished by peculiarities of tone; and nothing is more difficult than to acquire those tones of language that one has not learned in early life: so that the native country, and even the native province, of a stranger, may be known by his accent; which in both public and private life is frequently an advantage.

45. We learn to speak, when our organs are most flexible, and our powers of imitation most active; that is, when we are infants: and, even then, this is no easy acquisition; being the effect of constant practice continued every day, for some years, from morning to night. Were we never to attempt speech, till grown up, there is reason to think, that we should never learn to speak at all. And therefore, if there ever was a time when all mankind were dumb, *mutum et turpe pecus*, as Epicurus taught, all mankind must, in the ordinary course of things, have continued dumb to this day. For speech could not be *necessary* to animals who were supposed to have existed for ages without it; and among such animals the invention of unnecessary

necessary and difficult arts, whereof they saw no example in the world around them, was not to be expected. And speech, if invented at all by them, must have been invented, either by dumb infants who were incapable of invention, or by dumb men who were incapable of speech. Mankind, therefore, must have spoken in all ages; the young constantly learning to speak by imitating those who were older. And if so, our first parents must have received this art, as well as some others, by inspiration.

46. Moses informs us, that the first language continued to be spoken by all mankind, till the building of Babel, that is, for about two thousand years. But, on that occasion, a miraculous confusion of languages took place; which must have immediately divided the human race into tribes or nations, as they only would choose to keep together who understood one another; and which accounts for the great variety of primitive tongues now in the world. By primitive tongues I mean those, which, having no resemblance to
any

any other tongue in the sound of their words, are not supposed to be derived from any other. Greek and Latin resemble one another not a little; whence it is probable, that both were derived from some primitive tongue more ancient than either. The modern languages of France, Spain, Italy, and Portugal resemble one another very much; and we know they are in a great measure derived from the ancient Latin.

47. But there is no reason to think, that at Babel any other material alteration was introduced into human nature. And as men ever since have had the same faculties, and been placed in the same or in similar circumstances, it may be presumed, that the modes of human thought must have been much the same from that time forward; and, consequently, as speech arises from thought, that all languages must have some resemblance, in structure at least, if not in sound. Those particulars in which all languages resemble one another, must be essential to language. The *Essentials of Language* I shall proceed to consider,

consider, when I have made a remark or two on speech made visible by writing.

48. A word is an audible and articulate sign of thought: a letter is a visible sign of an articulate sound. Every man can speak who hears, and men have spoken in all ages; but in many nations the art of writing is still unknown. For before men can invent writing, they must divide their speech into words, and subdivide their words into simple elementary sounds, assigning to each sound a particular visible symbol: which, though easy to us, because we know the art, is never thought of by savages, and has been overlooked, or not sufficiently attended to, by some nations of very long standing. By means of writing, human thoughts may be made more durable than any other work of man; may be circulated in all nations; and may be so corrected, compared, and compounded, as to exhibit within a moderate compass the accumulated wisdom of many ages. It is therefore needless to enlarge upon the usefulness of this art, as the means of ascertaining, methodizing, preserving,

preserving, and extending human knowledge.

49. There is reason to think, that this art must have been in the world from very early times, and that the use of an alphabet was known before the hieroglyphicks of Egypt were invented. These last were probably contrived for the purpose of expressing mysteries of religion and government in a way not intelligible to the vulgar. For a hieroglyphick is a sort of riddle addressed to the eye; as if the figure of a circle were carved on a pillar, in order to represent eternity; a lamp, to denote life; an eye on the top of a sceptre, to signify a sovereign. Such conceits imply refinement rather than simplicity, and the disguise rather than the exhibition of thought; and therefore seem to have been the contrivance of men, who were in quest not of a necessary, but of a mysterious, art; who had leisure to be witty and allegorical; who *could* express their thoughts plainly, but did not choose to do it.

50. In China they understand writing
and

and printing too, and have done so, we are told, for many ages : but to this day they have not invented an alphabet, at least their men of learning use none. They are said to have a distinct character for each of their words, about fourscore thousand in all ; which makes it impossible for a foreigner, and extremely difficult to a native, to understand their written language. In very early times, men wrote, by engraving on stone ; afterwards, by tracing out figures with a coloured liquid upon wood, the bark of trees, the Egyptian papyrus manufactured into a sort of paper, the skins of goats, sheep, and calves made into parchment : in a word, different contrivances have been adopted in different ages, and by different nations. Pens, ink, and paper, as we use them, are said to have been introduced into these parts of the world about six hundred years ago.

51. The first printing known in Europe was, like that of the Chinese, (from whom, however, our printers did not borrow it), by blocks of wood, whereon were engra-

E

ved

ved all the characters of every page. This art is supposed to have been invented in Germany, or in Flanders, about the year 1420. Printing with moveable types was found out about thirty years later, and is a very great improvement upon the former method. By means of this wonderful art, books are multiplied to such a degree, that every family (I had almost said every person) may now have a Bible; which, when manuscripts only were in use, every parish could hardly afford to have; as the expence of writing out so great a book would be at least equal to that of building an ordinary country church. This one example may suggest a hint for estimating the importance of the art of printing.

52. Within less than a century after it was invented, Printing was brought to perfection in France, by the illustrious Robert Stephen and his son Henry; who were not only the greatest of printers, but also the most learned men of modern times; and to whom, for their beautiful and correct editions of the Classics, and for their
Dictionaries

Dictionaries of the Greek and Latin tongues, every modern scholar is under very great obligations.

S E C T. III.

Essentials of Language.

53. **H**OW many sorts of words are necessary in language? And what is the nature and use of each particular sort? When we have answered these two questions, we may be supposed to have discussed the present subject. In English, there are ten sorts of words; which are all found in the following short sentence: "I now see the good man coming, but alas! he walks with difficulty." *I* and *He* are pronouns; *now* is an adverb; *see* and *walks* are verbs; *the* is an article; *good*, an adjective; *man* and *difficulty* are nouns, the former substantive, the latter abstract; *coming* is a participle; *but*, a conjunction; *alas*, an interjection; *with*, a preposition. That no other sorts of words are necessary

in language, will appear, when we have seen in what respects these are necessary.

54. OF NOUNS. A Noun, or, as it is less properly called, a Substantive, is the name of the thing spoken of. Without this sort of word, men could not speak of one another or of any thing else. Nouns, therefore, there must be in all languages. Those which denote a genus, as *animal*, or a species, as *man*, may be applied either to one or to many things, and must therefore be so contrived as to express both unity and plurality. But a noun which is applicable to one individual only, and which is commonly called a Proper name, cannot, where language is suited to the nature of things, have a plural. Proper names, therefore, when they take a plural as well as a singular form, cease to be proper names, and become the names of *classes* or *tribes* of beings: so that, when one says *duodecim Cæsares*, the twelve Cæsars, the noun is used as an appellative common to twelve persons. Two numbers, the singular and plural, are all that are necessary in language. Some ancient tongues, however,

ever, as the Hebrew, the Celtick, and the Attick and Poetick dialects of the Greek, have also a dual number to express two; but this is superfluous. And some nouns there are, in every language perhaps, that have no singular, and some that have no plural, even when there is nothing in their signification to hinder it: this is irregular and accidental.

55. Another thing essential to nouns is *Gender*, to signify *Sex*. All things are either male, or female, or both, or neither. Duplicity of sex being uncommon and doubtful, language has no expression for it in the structure of nouns, but considers all things, and all the names of things, as masculine or feminine, or as neuter; which last word denotes *neither* feminine nor masculine. Of all things without sex the names in some languages, particularly English, are, or may be, neuter: in Latin and Greek, and many other tongues, the gender of nouns denoting things without sex is fixed by the termination of the noun, or by its declension, or by some other circumstances too minute to be here specified.

56. Things

56. Things without sex have sometimes masculine or feminine names from a supposed analogy which they seem to bear to things that have sex. Thus, on account of his great power, Death is masculine in Greek, and in English has been called the *king* of terrors. But this does not hold universally. In Latin, and many other languages, Death is feminine; and in German, and some other northern tongues, the sun is feminine, and the moon masculine. Sometimes the name of an animal species is both masculine and feminine; which, however, implies nothing like duplicity of sex, and means no more than that the name belongs to every individual of the species, whether male or female.

57. When the sex of animals is obvious, and material to be known, one name is sometimes given to the male, and another to the female; as king, queen; son, daughter; man, woman, &c. When the sex is less obvious, or less important, as in insects, fishes, and many sorts of birds, one name serves for both sexes, and is masculine or feminine according to the custom of

of the language. And here let it be remarked, once for all, that in what relates to the gender of nouns, and indeed in almost every part of the grammar of every language, certain arbitrary rules have been established, which cannot be accounted for philosophically, from the nature of the thing; which therefore it belongs not to Universal Grammar to consider; and for which no other reason can be given, than that such is the law of the language as custom has settled it.

58. OF PRONOUNS. The name given to this class of words sufficiently declares their nature; they being in all languages put *pro nominibus*, in the place of nouns or of names. Persons conversing together may be ignorant of one another's names, and may have occasion to speak of things or persons, absent or present, whose names they either do not know, or do not care to be always repeating. Words therefore there must be, to be used instead of such names; and withal to ascertain the gender, situation, and some other obvious and general circumstances of the things or persons

sons spoken of. These words are called Pronouns. Some of them may introduce a sentence, and are therefore called Prepositive, as *I, Thou, He, She, This, That, &c.* Others are termed Subjunctive or Relative, because they subjoin a clause or sentence to something previous, as *qui, quæ, quod, who, which, that.* This sort of pronoun has the import of both a pronoun and a copulative conjunction, and may be resolved into *et ille, et illa, et illud.*

59. In conversation, the person who speaks is first and chiefly attended to, and the person spoken to is next. Hence *Ego, I,* is called the pronoun of the first person; *Tu, Thou,* of the second; and, as distinguished from these, *He, She, and It* are called pronouns of the third person. Those of the first and second need no distinction of gender, as the sex of the speakers is obvious to each other from the voice, dress, &c. But the pronoun of the third person must have gender, *ille, illa, illud, he, she, it*; because what is spoken of may be absent, and consequently its sex not obvious; or may be not a person, but a thing,
and

and consequently of neither sex. The pronouns of all the three persons must have number; because the speaker, the hearer, or the thing or person spoken of, may be either one or more than one.—Pronouns are not numerous in any language, very few being sufficient for all occasions on which they become necessary. The different classes of them are well enough distinguished in the common grammars.

60. OF ATTRIBUTIVES. These are words which denote the attributes, qualities, and operations, of things and persons. They form a very numerous class, and were by the ancient grammarians called *ἰνυατα*, *verba*, whatever may be said or affirmed concerning persons or things. Thus of a man it may be said, that he is *good*, that he *speaks*, or that he is *walking*. Attributives are of three sorts, Adjectives, Verbs, and Participles. An Adjective, or Epithet, denotes a quality and nothing more; as *good*, *bad*, *black*, *white*. Verbs and Participles denote qualities too, but with the addition of something else, as will appear by and by.

F

61. It

61. It is strange, that in all the common grammars the adjective should be considered as a noun. It is no more a noun, than it is a verb. Nay verbs and adjectives are of nearer affinity than nouns and adjectives. For the verb and adjective agree in this, that both express qualities or attributes; whereas the noun is the name of the thing to which qualities or attributes belong. And therefore the term *adjective-noun* is as improper as if we were to say *participle-noun*, or *verb-noun*.

62. In many languages it is a rule, that the adjective must agree with its noun in gender, number, and case: and where adjectives have gender, number, and case, the rule is reasonable and natural. But it is not so in all languages. English adjectives have neither gender nor number; but, like indeclinable Latin adjectives, (as *frugi*, *centum*, *nequam*), are invariably the same. We say, a good man, a good woman, a good thing; good men, good women, good things; without making any change in the adjective: and in this syntax we feel
no

no inconvenience. And the same thing is true of English participles.

63. One variation, however, those English adjectives require, which in their signification admit of the distinctions of *more* and *less*. This paper is white, and snow is white, but snow is whiter than this paper. Solon was wise, Socrates wiser, Solomon the wisest of men. The degrees are innumerable in which different things may possess the same quality: it is impossible to say with precision, how much wiser Solomon was than Socrates, or by how many degrees snow is whiter than this paper. But in human art there is no infinity; and therefore we cannot in language have degrees of comparison to express all possible varieties of more and less.

64. Two degrees of comparison, the Comparative and Superlative, are all that seem to be necessary; and, for expressing these, different nations may have different contrivances:—what is called the Positive degree is the simple form of the adjective, and expresses neither degree nor comparison. Participles admit not of the variation

we speak of: when they seem to assume it, as when we say *doctus*, *doctior*, *doctissimus*, they cease to be participles, and become adjectives. Some adverbs admit of this variety, as *diu*, *diutius*, *diutissime*. Verbs too may express degrees of comparison, but do it by means of auxiliary adverbs; as, *magis amat*, *vehementissime amat*.

65. The comparative degree denotes superiority, and implies a comparison of one, or more, persons, or things, with another, or with others, that is, or are, set in opposition: Solomon was wiser than Socrates; the Athenians were more learned than the Thebans; he is more intelligent than all his teachers. There are two Superlatives; one implying comparison, and each denoting eminence or superiority. We use the former when we say, Solomon was the wisest of men; where Solomon is compared to a species of beings of whom he is said to be one. We use the latter, when we say, Solomon was a very wise, or a most wise man. In these last sentences, comparison, though remotely insinuated, is not, as in the former example, expressly asserted.

66. OF

66. OF VERBS. Man is endowed, not only with senses to perceive, and memory to retain, but also with judgement, whereby we compare things and thoughts together, so as to make affirmations concerning them. When we say, Solomon wise, we affirm nothing, and the words are not a sentence. But when we say, Solomon is wise, we utter a complete sentence; expressing a judgement and an affirmation, founded on a comparison of a certain man *Solomon*, with a certain quality *wise*. The judgement of the mind is here expressed by the affirmative word *is*; and this word is a verb. A verb, therefore, seems to be “ a word expressing affirmation, and necessary to form a complete sentence or proposition.”

67. Here observe, that every proposition affirms or denies something; as, Snow is white, Riches are not permanent. Observe further, that the thing concerning which we affirm or deny is called the *subject* of the proposition, namely, *Snow* in the one example, and *Riches* in the other; that what is affirmed or denied concerning the
subject

subject is called the *predicate* of the proposition, namely, *white* in the one example, and *permanent* in the other; and that the words whereby we affirm or deny, are called the *copula* of the proposition, namely, *is* in the one example, and *are not* in the other.—It was said, that every proposition either affirms or denies. Now denial implies affirmation; to deny that a thing is, is to affirm that it is not. In every sentence or proposition, therefore, there is affirmation, and a verb is that which expresses it. Consequently, a verb “is necessary in every sentence, and every “verb expresses affirmation.”

68. Some affirmations have no dependence on time, with respect to their truth or falsehood. That God is good, that two and two are four, and that malevolence is not to be commended, always was, will, and must be, true. For expressing these, and the like affirmations, those verbs alone are necessary, which the Latins call *substantive*, and the Greeks more properly *verbs of existence*; as *sum*, *ſto*, *exiſto*, εἰμι, ὡμαι, &c. But innumerable affirmations
are

are necessarily connected with time : I may affirm, that a thing *was* done, *is* done, or *will be* done. In verbs, therefore, there must be a contrivance for expressing *time*. Moreover, affirmations have a necessary connection with a person or with persons : *I, thou, he*, may affirm ; *we, ye, or they* may affirm. In a verb, therefore, “affirmation is expressed, together with *time*, “*number*, and *person*.”

69. Further : Our thoughts shift with great rapidity ; and it is natural for us to wish to speak as fast as we think. No wonder then, that we should often, where it can be done conveniently, express two or three thoughts by one word ; and particularly, that we should by one word express both the attribute, and the affirmation which connects that attribute with some person or thing. In this way, and partly for this reason, we say *Scribo*, I write, instead of *Ego sum scribens*, I am writing. And thus our idea of a verb is completed. And we may now define it, “A word necessary in every sentence, and “signifying affirmation with respect to
“some

“ some attribute, together with the designation of time, number, and person.” Thus *Scribo*, I am writing, is a complete sentence, and comprehends these four things; first, *I* the *person*, and *one* person; secondly, *am* the *affirmation*; thirdly, *writing*, the *attribute*; and fourthly, *now* or present time.

70. But the verbs of all languages are not so complex: and this definition applies rather to Greek and Latin verbs, than to those of the modern tongues. For we express a great deal of the meaning of our verbs by auxiliary words: whereas the Greeks and Romans generally varied the meaning of theirs by *inflection*, that is, by changing the form of the word. We must say, *He might have written*, where a Roman needed only to say *Scripsisset*. Some auxiliary words indeed there are in Greek and Latin verbs, but not near so many as in ours. In English, French, Italian, and other modern tongues, the passive verb (or passive voice, as it is called) is entirely made up of auxiliary words introducing the passive participle; as, I am taught, they

they were taught, thou wilt be taught, &c.

71. This peculiarity in the structure of modern verbs is to be imputed to those northern nations who overturned the Roman empire, establishing themselves and their government in the conquered provinces; and who, being an unlettered race of men, and not caring either to learn the Latin tongue, or teach their own to those whom they had conquered, formed in time a mixed language, made up partly of Latin words and partly of idioms of their own; with a great number of auxiliary words, to supply the want of those Latin inflections, which they would not give themselves the trouble to learn. It is not wholly improbable, that, originally, the Greek and Latin inflections were also auxiliary words; which came to be, by the accidental pronunciation of successive ages, gradually incorporated with the radical part of the verbs and nouns to which they belong. This, however, is only conjecture; but it derives some plausibility from the nature of the inflections of the Hebrew

G

tongue,

tongue, many of which may be accounted for in the way here hinted at.

72. The attributes expressed by the verb may be reduced to four; first, *Being*, as *Sum, I am*; secondly, *Action*, as *vulnero, I wound*; thirdly, *Being acted upon*, as *vulneror, I am wounded*; and fourthly, *Being at rest*, as *Sedeo, I sit, habito, I dwell*. Now, without a reference to time, not one of these attributes can be conceived; for existence, action, suffering, and rest, do all imply time, and may all be referred to different parts of time. Hence the origin of the *Times* of verbs, commonly, though improperly, called the *Tenses*. Time is past, present, or future.

73. The Tenses are in some languages reckoned five. But, if we consider the exact meaning of the several parts of the verb, we shall find, that, in the languages most familiar to us, there are eight or nine tenses; though each may not have a particular form of the verb adapted to it. In other languages there may perhaps be more; and in some, the Hebrew for example, there are not near so many; two tenses,
the

the past and the future, being all that the Hebrew grammarian acknowledges; tho', as may be reasonably imagined, means are not wanting for expressing in his language the import of other necessary tenses.

74. Tenses may be divided; first, into those that are *definite with respect to time*, and those that *with respect to time are indefinite or aorist*: secondly, into those that *in respect of action are perfect*, and those which *are imperfect in respect of action*: thirdly, into *simple* tenses, expressive of *one time*, and *compound* tenses, expressive of *more times than one*. My examples on this subject I take from active verbs, they being the fullest and most complete of any.

75. Tenses *definite in respect of time* are,
 1. The *Definite Present*, *Scribo, I write*; which refers to the present point of time, and to no other. 2. The *Preterperfect*, *I have written*, which generally refers to past time ending in or near the present. For this tense the Greeks have a particular form *ἔγραψα*; but the Latins have not; for *Scripsi* signifies not only *I have written*, but also *I wrote* and *I did write*, which last are a-

rists of the past, as will appear presently.

3. The *Paulo-post-future*, *Scripturus sum*, *I am about to write*, which implies future time that is just going to commence.

76. Tenses *indefinite in time*, or *aorist*, are

1. The *Indefinite present*, which appears in sentences like the following; God *is* good; two and two *are* four; a wise son *makes* a glad father, &c.; in which no particular present time is referred to, because these affirmations may be made with truth at all times. In Hebrew and in Erse the import of this tense is expressed by the future; which sometimes happens in English: for whether we say, A wise son *makes* a glad father, or *will make* a glad father, the sense is the same. 2. The *aorist of the past*, ἔγραψα, *I wrote*, or *did write*; which refers to past time, but to no particular part of past time.

3. The *indefinite future*, ἠράψω, *Scribam*, *I shall write*; which in like manner refers to future time, but to no particular part of time future.

77. Tenses *perfect or complete in respect of action* are, 1. The *Preterperfect*, ἔγραψα, *I have written*. 2. The *aorist of the past*, ἔγραψα,

ἔγραψα, *I wrote*. 3. The *Plusquamperfect*, ἔγραψαμιν, *Scriptseram, I had written*. 4. The *Future perfect*, Scripsero, *I shall have written*, or *I shall have done writing*; a tense, which the Greeks cannot express in one word; and which is commonly, though very improperly, called *the future of the subjunctive*. Scripsero in Greek would be ἐσομαι γράψας. It is as truly of the indicative mood as scribam, or scriptus ero.

78. Tenses imperfect, or incomplete with respect to action, are, 1. The imperfect preterit ἔγραπον, *Scribebam, I was writing*. 2. The indefinite future, Scribam, *I shall write*. 3. The paulo-post-future, Scripturus sum; *I am about to write*, which in Greek is μέλλω γράφειν.

Observe, that the Greek paulo-post-future (so called in the grammars), as expressed by a single word, is found only in the passive verb; γερραφομαι, *I am about to be written*. Observe also, that the imperfect preterit often denotes in Latin customary actions; dicebat, *he was wont to say*, the same as solebat dicere.

79. Compound tenses, which unite two or more times in one tense, are, 1. The preterperfect,

preterperfect, which generally, though not always, (at least in English), unites the past with the present, *I have written*; where observe, that the auxiliary verb *I have* is of the present tense, and the participle *written* signifies complete action, and implies past time. 2. The *Plusquamperfect*, *Scripteram, I had written*, which unites past time with past time, and intimates that a certain action was finished before another action which is also past. He came to desire me not to write, but *I had written* before he came. 3. The *future perfect*, *Scriptero, I shall have done writing*; which unites present and past time with future; and intimates, that when a certain time now future shall come to be present I shall then have finished a certain action. *Cras mane hora decima scripsero has literas*. To-morrow morning at ten I shall have finished the writing of this letter. 4. The *Paulo-post-future*, which unites present with future time, as plainly appears in the Latin way of expressing it; *Scripturus* the participle being future, and *sum* the auxiliary present.

80. Tenses

80. Tenses *expressive of one time* are, 1. The *Definite present*; 2. The *aoiist of the past*; 3. The *indefinite future*; 4. The *imperfect preterit*; which have all been described under other characters.—In this analysis of the tenses, I have made their number nine. 1. The *Definite present*. 2. The *Indefinite present*. 3. The *imperfect*. 4. The *aoiist of the past*. 5. The *Praterperfect*. 6. The *Plusquamperfect*. 7. The *indefinite future*. 8. The *paulo-post-future*. 9. The *perfect future*. All these tenses are not necessary in language; but, in most of the languages we know, the full import of each of them may in one way or other be expressed.

81. The *moods* of verbs express not only our thoughts, but also something of the intention or state of mind with which we utter them. If we affirm absolutely, we use the *Indicative* or *Declarative mood*; if relatively, conditionally, or dependently on something else, it is the *Subjunctive*. If we declare our meaning in the form of a wish, it is called the *Optative*; if in the form of a command or request, it is the *Imperative*.

Imperative. And if we affirm concerning what might be done, or ought to be done, it has been called the Potential. But there is no need of distinguishing moods so nicely.

82. They may be all reduced to two, the Indicative, which affirms absolutely, and the Subjunctive, which affirms relatively, or with a dependence on something else. For the Imperative is only an elliptical way of expressing the indicative; *go thou* being the same with *I entreat* or *I command* thee to go: the Potential is always either Indicative or Subjunctive: the Greek Optative is a form of the Subjunctive, and has much the same import: and the Infinitive is neither a mood, nor a part of the verb, because it expresses no affirmation, and has no reference to any one person or number more than any other. The Infinitive expresses abstractly the simple meaning of the verb, and does therefore in its nature resemble an indeclinable abstract noun; and in fact is often used as such in most languages: as *Cupio discere*, *Studere delectat me*, *Reddas dulce loqui*, *reddas ridere decorum*.

83. Verbs

83. Verbs are divided into Active, Passive, and Neuter. An active verb denotes acting, as *verbero*, I beat: a passive verb denotes being acted upon, as *verberor*, I am beaten: a neuter verb denotes *neither* the one nor the other, and only signifies the state or condition of the thing or person concerning which the affirmation is made; as *sedeo*, I sit, *sto* I stand, *dormit* he sleeps. Active verbs are subdivided into Transitive and Intransitive. In the former, the action passes, *transit*, from the agent towards some other person or thing, as I *build* a house, I *break* a stone, I *see* a man. The latter denote action which does not pass from the agent towards any thing else, as *I run*, *I walk*. This sort of verb, when strictly intransitive, cannot assume a passive form; for where action does not pass from the agent, there is nothing that can be said to be acted upon. Nor do neuter verbs take a passive, because nothing is acted upon where there is no action.

84. When a thing or person acts upon itself, as *Cato slew himself*, the Greeks in very early times are said to have made use

H

of

of the *middle* verb, or middle voice ; which the grammarians endeavour to prove by quoting three or four examples from Homer. The Hebrews had a like contrivance. But in most of the Greek books now extant the middle voice has a signification purely active. The verbs called Deponent, Desiderative, Frequentative, Inceptive, &c. need not be considered here, being found in some languages only, and therefore not essential to speech. The *impersonal* verb is so called, because the nominative, expressed or understood, on which it depends, is always a thing, and *never a person*. The nature of this sort of verb is well enough explained in the common grammars.

85. OF ADVERBS. It is the nature of the adverb, as the name imports, to give some additional meaning to the verb, that is, to the attributive (see § 60.)—to the adjective, as *valde bonus* ; to the participle, as *graviter vulneratus* ; to the verb, as *fortiter pugnavit*. Adverbs are also joined to adverbs, as *magis fortiter*, *sat cito si sat bene* ; and sometimes even to nouns ; but when this is the case, the noun will be found to comprehend the meaning of an attributive,

as

as *admodum puella*, which occurs in Livy, and signifies that the young woman was *very young*. Hence adverbs have been called *secondary attributives*, or words denoting the attributes of attributes.

86. But many of them are not of this character, and seem to have been contrived for no other purpose, but in order to express, by one indeclinable word, what would otherwise have required two or three words, as well as a more artful syntax. Thus *ubi* signifies, *in quo loco*; *quo*, *in quem locum*; *huc*, *in hunc locum*; *diu*, *per longum tempus*, &c. Adverbs therefore, if not essential to speech, are at least very useful, and all languages have them, and some in a very great number. Too many of them, however, have in writing a bad effect, and make a style harsh and unwieldy; and the same thing is true of attributives in general. The strength of language lies in its nouns or substantives.

87. OF PARTICIPLES. The common definition of a participle is, "A word derived from a verb, and signifying a quality with time." This is indeed true of

the future participle active, but not of the others. *Scribens*, writing, and *scriptus*, written, do not of themselves express time at all, and may apply to any time, even as an adjective may do, according to the tense of the verb with which they are connected: I *was writing* yesterday, I *am writing* to-day, and *shall be writing* to-morrow; the letter *was written*, *is written*, *will be written*. As to the future participle passive (as it is called) of the Latins, it generally denotes rather necessity or duty, than future time: *Dicit literas a se scribendas esse*, He says that a letter must be written by him; *Dicit literas a se scriptum iri*, He says that a letter will be written by him. When Cato in the senate said *Delenda est Carthago*, he did not utter a prophecy of what *was to be done*, but recommended what in his opinion *ought to be done*.

88. *Written* is a passive participle, and denotes complete action; the letter is *written*. *Writing* is an active participle, and denotes action continuing; I *am writing* now, I *was writing* yesterday, &c. If then it be asked, in what respect the participle

participle differs from the verb, it may be answered, that the participle does not imply affirmation, which to the verb is essential. If again it be asked, what distinguishes the participle from the adjective, the answer is this: The adjective denotes a quality simply, and is not necessarily derived from a verb; the participle is always derived from a verb, and denotes a quality or attribute, together with some other considerations relating to the continuance, completion, and futurity, of action or condition.

§ 89. OF INTERJECTIONS. These words are found in all languages, though perhaps it cannot be said that they are necessary. They are *thrown into* discourse, *interjecta*, in order to intimate some sudden feeling or emotion of the mind; and any one of them may comprehend the import of an entire sentence: *alas*, I am sorry; *strange*, I am surprised; *fye*, I hate it, I dislike it. They are well enough described and divided in any common grammar; but a little more minutely perhaps than was requisite. Laughter is not speech, but a *natural* and *inarticulate*

culate convulsion *universally understood*; and therefore, that mark in writing which denotes it can be no part of speech. And as to interjections of *imprecation*, I cannot admit that in language they are either necessary or useful.—The Greeks referred interjections to the class of adverbs; but they are of a nature totally different; and therefore the Latins did better in making them a separate part of speech.—To express our feelings by interjections is often natural: but too many of them, either in speech or writing, have a bad effect.

90. All the sorts of words hitherto considered have each of them some meaning, even when taken separate. But there are other words, as *From, But; A, The*; which taken separately signify nothing. The two first of these are necessary in language; the other two are rather useful than necessary: the former are called *Connectives*; the latter, *Articles* or *Definitives*. Connectives are of two sorts, Prepositions, which connect words, and Conjunctions, which connect sentences.

91. OF PREPOSITIONS. A Preposition
is

is a sort of word, which of itself has no signification, but which has the power of uniting such words, as the rules of a language, or the nature of things, would not allow to be united in any other way. When Prepositions are thus employed in uniting words, they have signification: like cyphers in arithmetic, which taken separately mean nothing, but when joined to numbers have a very important meaning. And the same thing is true of Conjunctions and Articles. If I say, *he came town*, I join two words, which the rules of our language will not permit to unite so as to make sense. But if I take a preposition and say, *he came to town*, or *he came from town*, I speak good sense and good grammar.

92. Every body has seen a list of Prepositions, and knows how they are used in syntax. They all express some circumstance relating to *place*, as *at*, *with*, *by*, *from*, *before*, *behind*, *beyond*, *over*, *under*, &c.: but in a figurative sense most of them are also used to express other relations than those of place. Thus we say, He rules
over

over the people, He serves *under* such a commander, He will do nothing *beneath* his character, Gratitude *beyond* expression, &c. They are sometimes prefixed to a word, so as to form a part of it; in which case they often, but not always, give it something of their own signification. Thus, to *undervalue* is to rate a thing under or within its value; to *overcome* is to subdue, for men must be subdued before they allow others to go or come over them: but *to understand* does not mean *to stand under*, but *to comprehend mentally*; *to undergo* means, not *to go under*, but *to bear*, or *suffer*.—An English preposition often changes the meaning of a verb by being put after it. *To cast*, is *to throw*; but *to cast up* may signify, *to calculate*: *to give*, is *to bestow*, but *to give over*, *to cease* or *abandon*: *to give up*, *to resign*: *to give out*, *to publish*, or *proclaim*, &c.

93. Some Prepositions appear in the beginning of words, but never stand by themselves, and are therefore called *Inseparable*. Of these there are five or six in Latin, and about twice as many in English,
Separable

Separable Prepositions are not a numerous class of words. In Latin there are about forty-five; in Greek eighteen; and in English between thirty and forty. But some prepositions have many different meanings. The English *of* has upwards of twelve; *from* has at least twenty; and *for* has no fewer than thirty. See Johnson's Dictionary.

94. In the modern languages of Europe, prepositions prefixed to nouns supply the want of cases; *of man, to man, with man*, being the same with *hominis, homini, homine*. The English genitive is sometimes distinguished by subjoining *s* to the noun, as *man's life, hominis vita*; and some of our pronouns have an oblique case, as *I* which has *me*, *thou* which has *thee*, *she* which has *her*, &c. With these and a few other exceptions, we may affirm that there are no cases in the English tongue; and the same thing is true of some other tongues. Hence we infer, that cases, though in Greek and Latin very important and a source of much elegance, are not essential to language.

I

95. Of

95. OF CONJUNCTIONS. A conjunction unites two or more sentences in one, and sometimes marks the dependence of one sentence upon another. If I say, He is good *and* he is wise, I unite two sentences in one : if I say, He is good *because* he is wise, I unite two sentences as before, and also mark the dependence of the one, as a cause, upon the other, as an effect. Conjunctions sometimes seem to unite single words ; but, when that is the case, each of the words so united will be found to have the import of a sentence. When it is said, Peter *and* John went to the temple, there is the full meaning of two sentences, because there are two affirmations, Peter went to the temple, John went to the temple.

96. Some conjunctions, while they connect sentences, do also connect their meanings, making one as it were a continuation of the other ; as, he went *because* he was ordered : these are called *Conjunctive*. Others, termed *Disjunctive*, connect sentences, while they seem to disjoin their meanings, and set, as it were, one part of a sentence in opposition to another : as, Socra-

tes

tes was wise, *but* Alcibiades was not. Each sort admits of subdivisions, which are sufficiently explained in the common Latin grammars.

97. OF THE ARTICLE. When a thing occurs, which has no proper name, or whose proper name we know not or do not choose to mention, we, in speaking of it, refer it to its species, and call it *man*, *horse*, *tree*, &c. or to its genus, and call it *animal*, *quadruped*, *vegetable*, &c. But the thing itself is neither a genus nor a species, but an individual. To show, therefore, that it is an individual, we prefix an article, and call it *a man*, *a horse*, *a tree*, &c. If this individual be unknown, or perceived now for the first time, or if we choose to speak of it as unknown, we prefix what is called the *Indefinite article*, and say, Here comes a man, I see *an* ox: and this article coincides nearly in signification with the word *one*. The French, and many other nations, have a like contrivance. But, in the case now supposed, the Greeks would prefix no article: *a man comes* is in Greek *αὐτὸς ἐρχεται*. If the individual be known to us, or if we

I 2

choose

choose to speak of it so as to intimate some previous acquaintance with it, we prefix the *Definite article*, *The*, as the Greeks did their $\delta \eta \tau \acute{o}$; *the man comes*, $\delta \alpha \nu \eta \rho \epsilon \rho \chi \epsilon \tau \alpha \iota$. A correspondent article is found in French, Italian, Hebrew, and most other cultivated languages, the Latin excepted.

98. That which is very eminent is supposed to be generally known: which is also the case with those things and persons, whether eminent or not, which are nearly connected with us, or which we frequently see: and therefore to the names of such things or persons we sometimes prefix the same definite article. *A king* is any king; but *the king* is the person whom we acknowledge for our sovereign. They who live in or near a town, even though it be a very small one, speak of it when at home by the name of *the town*.

99. Those words only take the article, which are capable of being made more definite with it than they are without it. *I*, *thou*, and *he*, are as definite as they can be, and therefore never take the article. Names that denote genera and species may be

be more or less definite, and may therefore take the article; *a man, the man, an animal, the animal*. Proper names too may take it when they become common appellatives; as *the Cæsars, the Catos*. The proper names of some great natural objects, as mountains and rivers, take in English the definite article; as *the Alps, the Grampians, the Thames*. But one single mountain, however great, if it have a proper name, does not take it: we say, Etna, Atlas, Lebanon, Olympus; not *the Etna*, &c. The Greeks sometimes prefix their article to the proper name of a man or woman; in order, perhaps, to mark the gender of the name, or to make the expression more emphatical, or merely to improve the sound of the sentence. This is not usual in other languages. But the Italians sometimes prefix their definite article to proper names of favourite poets, singers, and fiddlers, and no doubt think that by so doing they give energy to the expression.

100. So far is the indefinite article from being necessary in language, that the Greeks have nothing like it; and in English we never

never prefix it to the plural number. By the Greek poets the article is more frequently omitted than used; and it is also frequently omitted in the prose of the Attick dialect. Sometimes we may put the one article for the other without changing the sense: as, *the* proverb says, or *a* proverb says, that nothing violent lasts long. These things seem to show that articles are not very necessary. At other times, however, and for the most part, the two articles differ widely in signification. Thus, instead of, Nathan said unto David, Thou art *the* man, if we were to say, Thou art *a* man, we should entirely change the meaning of the passage.

101. In Latin, there is no article; its place, when it is necessary, being supplied by a pronoun, as *ille* and *ipse*. And this seems to be sufficient. The last example, translated thus, *Dixit Nathan Davidi, Tu es ille homo*, or *Tu es ille*, is as significant in Latin as in English. Sometimes, by prefixing the definite article to a noun, we bestow a peculiar signification upon it. In Greek, *ανθρωπος* is *a man*; but *ο ανθρωπος* is, in the

the Attick dialect, the public executioner. In English, *a speaker* is any person who speaks; but *the speaker* is he who presides in the House of Commons.

102. And now it appears, that in Latin there are nine sorts of words, the Noun, Pronoun, Adjective, Verb, Participle, Adverb, Interjection, Preposition, and Conjunction. In Greek, Hebrew, English, and many other languages, there is also an article, and consequently there are ten parts of speech. The Noun, Pronoun, Adjective, Verb, Participle, Preposition, and Conjunction, seem to be essential to language; the Article, Interjection, and most of the Adverbs, are rather useful than necessary. So much for the Faculty of Speech, and Universal Grammar.

S E C T.

S E C T. IV.

Of Perception or External Sensation.

103. **A**S this subject is connected with Natural Philosophy, I shall make but a few slight remarks upon it; with a view chiefly to some things that are to follow.—The soul, using the body as its instrument, perceives external things, that is, bodies and their qualities. All animals have this faculty in a greater or less degree, and all complete animals in that precise degree which is necessary to their life and well-being. Corporeal things, when within the sphere of our perceptive powers, and attended to by us, affect our organs of sense in a certain manner, and so are perceived by the soul or mind. We know that this is the fact, but cannot explain it, or trace the connection that there is between our minds and impressions made on our bodily organs; being ignorant of the nature of that union which subsists between

tween the soul and its body. Our perception of bodies is accompanied with a belief, that they exist and are what they appear to be, and that we perceive the bodies themselves : and this belief is unavoidable, and amounts to absolute certainty. We cannot prove by argument, that bodies exist, or that we ourselves exist ; nor is it necessary that we should : for the thing is self-evident, and the constitution of our nature makes it impossible for us to entertain any doubt concerning this matter.

104. It would be a task equally tedious and unprofitable, to explain the notions of philosophers with respect to the manner in which the mind has been supposed to perceive things external. Aristotle fancied, that, by means of our senses, outward things communicate to the mind their form without their matter ; as the seal imparts to the wax the figures carved on it, without the substance. These forms of things, in their first appearance to the mind, he calls *sensible species* ; which, as retained by the memory, or exhibited in the imagination, he terms *Phantasms*. And these phantasms,

K

when

when by the operation of the intellect they are refined into general ideas, he calls *intelligible species*. For example: I see a man; this perception is the sensible species. I afterwards remember his appearance; or perhaps his appearance occurs to my mind, without my remembering, or considering that I had perceived it before; this is a phantasm. Lastly, my intellect, taking away from this phantasm every thing that distinguishes it from others, and retaining so much of it only as it has in common with a kind or sort, (see § 19.), transforms it into an intelligible species, or general idea, which we express by the common appellative *man*. All this seems to imply, that a thought of the mind has something of body in it, and consists of parts that may be separated: which to me is inconceivable.

105. Most modern philosophers give an account of this matter in words that are indeed different, but seem to amount to the same thing. They will not admit that the mind can perceive any thing which is not in the mind itself, or at least in the same

same place with it. Now the sun, moon, and stars, and the other things external to us, are neither in the mind, nor in the same place with it; for if they were, they would be in the inside of the human body. External things themselves, therefore, our mind, we are told, does not perceive at all; but it perceives *ideas* of them, which ideas are actually in the same place with the mind; either in the brain, or in something which has got the name of *sensorium*, in which the percipient being called the soul, or mind, is supposed to have its residence. See § 13.

106. When it was objected, That, on the supposition of our perceiving, not outward things themselves, but only ideas of them, we cannot be certain that outward things exist, the same philosophers, or rather their successors in the same school, admitted the objection; and came at last to affirm, that the soul perceives nothing but its own ideas; and that the sun and moon, the sea and the mountains, the men and other animals, and, in a word, the whole universe which we see around us, has no ex-

K 2

istence

istence but in the mind that perceives it. Never were reason and language more abused than by this extravagant theory ; which, instead of illustrating any thing, involves a plain fact in utter darkness ; and, by teaching that our senses are fallacious faculties, leads, as will appear hereafter, to the final subversion of all human knowledge.—The doctrine already laid down must therefore remain as it is. We perceive outward things themselves, and believe that they exist, and are what they appear to be. This is the language of common sense, and the belief of all mankind. This we must believe whether we will or not : and this even those who deny it must take for granted ; otherwise they could not know how to act on any one emergence of life. And that the mind may perceive things at a distance, is as intelligible to us, as that it can perceive its own ideas.

107. The powers, by which the soul, using the body as its instrument, perceives outward things and their qualities, are called Senses, and commonly reckoned five. Tastes or relishes are referred to the sense of
of

of Tasting, and perceived by means of the tongue. Odours are referred to Smelling, the organ of which is the inner part of the nose. Sounds are perceived by the sense of Hearing, the organ whereof is the inner part of the ear. By means of the eye we perceive light and colours. All other bodily sensations are referred to Touch, the organs whereof are diffused over the whole body.

108. Tastes and smells, as perceived by the mind, bear no resemblance to the bodies that produce them; nor is there always a likeness between the tastes and smells of similar bodies; for salt and sugar may be very like in appearance, and yet are very unlike in other respects. The nature, therefore, of any particular taste or smell is known by experience only. Tastes and smells are innumerable; yet we have but few words to express them by, as *sour*, *sweet*, *bitter*, *acid*, *musty*, &c.; and some of these words are applied both to tastes and to smells: a proof, that these two senses are kindred faculties, and that the sensations we receive by them are somewhat similar;

similar ; which also appears from the position of the organs, and from this well-known fact, that those persons who have no smell have never an acute taste.

109. On applying a body to our tongue and nostrils, we discover its taste and smell ; the mind being, in consequence of this application, affected in a certain manner, by means of nerves or other minute organs. But what connects these organs with the mind, or why one body thus applied should convey to the mind the sensation of sweetness, and another that of salt or acid, it is impossible for man to explain.—These two senses are necessary to life, because they direct us in the choice of what is fit to be eaten and drank ; and the form and situation of their organs are the best that can be for this purpose. They are also instruments of pleasure, in a low degree indeed, but still in some degree. And they enlarge the sphere of our knowledge, by making us acquainted with two copious classes of sensible things, discoverable by no other faculty. To many animals smell is necessary to lead them to their prey or food ;

food ; and to man it sometimes gives notice of fire and wild beasts, and other dangerous things, which could not otherwise have been discovered till it was too late. And it recommends cleanliness, whereby both health of body and delicacy of mind are greatly promoted.

110. The word *taste*, as the name of an external sense or of a quality of body, has three different significations, which must be carefully distinguished. It means, first, a quality of body which exists in the body whether perceived or not : thus we speak of the *taste* of an apple. Secondly, it denotes a faculty in the mind, which faculty is exerted by means of the tongue, and which is always in the mind whether it be exerted or not ; for no man imagines, that when he tastes nothing he has lost the power or faculty of tasting. In this sense we use the word when we say, I have lost my smell by a cold, and therefore my *taste* is not so acute as usual. Thirdly, it signifies a sensation as perceived by the mind, and which exists only in the mind that perceives it, and no longer than while it is perceived :

perceived : in this sense we sometimes use the word when we speak of a sweet or bitter *taste*, a pleasant or unpleasant *taste*, an agreeable or disagreeable *taste*. The same threefold signification belongs to the words *smell*, *sight*, and several others ; which are used to denote an external thing, the faculty which perceives that thing, and the perception itself as it affects the mind.

III. Natural Philosophy teaches, that all sounding bodies are tremulous, and convey to the air an undulatory motion, which, if continued till it enter the inner part of the ear, raises in the mind a sensation called *sound* ; which bears no resemblance either to body or to motion ; which is not perceived by any other sense ; and which, being a simple feeling, cannot be defined or described, and is known by experience only. By experience also we learn, that all sounds proceed from bodies : and by attending to different sounds, as proceeding from bodies different in kind or differently situated, we are, in many cases, enabled to judge, on hearing a sound, what the sounding body is, and whether it

it be near or distant, on the right hand or on the left, before or behind us, above or under.

112. Sounds may be variously divided; into soft and loud; acute and grave; agreeable, disagreeable, and indifferent. And each of these sorts may be subdivided into Articulate and Inarticulate. Articulate sounds constitute speech, whereof we have treated already. Inarticulate sounds may be divided into musical sound and noise. Of musical sounds and their effects upon the mind, I shall speak hereafter; observing only at present, that their intervals are determined by the natural risings and fallings of the human voice in singing; and that, when we call some of them high and others low, it seems to be with a view to the high or low situation of their correspondent symbols in our musical scale*.

Indeed

* It has been said, that in forming a *grave* tone our breath or voice seems to rise from the *lower* part of the throat, and from the *upper* part in forming an *acute* tone. This is no improbable account of the origin of the terms *high* and *low* as applied to musical sound. It may, however, be

Indeed most of the epithets, which we apply to sound, are in that application *figurative*. *High* and *low*, *soft*, *acute*, *grave*, and *deep*, in their original and *proper* signification refer to objects, not of hearing, but of touch.

113. The ear is the great inlet to knowledge. Deaf men must always be very ignorant: but a man born blind, who hears, may learn many languages, and understand all sciences except those that relate to light and colours; and even of these he may in some measure comprehend the theory. The importance of this sense to our preservation is obvious. A deaf man in the company of those who hear, and a blind man with those who see, may live not uncomfortably: but, in order to judge of the value of a sense, we ought to consider what would be the consequence, if

remarked, that the more antient Greek writers considered *grave* tones as *high*, and *acute* tones as *low*. See *Smith's Harmonicks*, sect. 1. The antient Latin writers probably did the same. May not this have been owing to the situation of the strings on some of their musical instruments?

all

all mankind were to be deprived of it, or had never been endowed with it.

114. The eye is the organ of seeing, and its objects are light and colours. Bodies become visible by means of light, of which, in order to vision, some animals require more and others less, but all require some. The threefold signification of the word *sight* was formerly hinted at : it means the thing seen, the faculty of seeing, and the sensation or act of seeing. This last we may put an end to, by shutting our eyes ; but the visible object exists, whether we see it or not ; and the faculty of seeing remains in the mind when it is not exerted. No man imagines, that by shutting his eyes he annihilates light, or his power of seeing it ; but every man knows, that by shutting his eyes he puts an end to the act of seeing, and renews it again when he opens them. When I say, My *sight* is weak, the noun denotes the power or faculty of seeing : when I say, I see a strange *sight*, the same word denotes the thing seen : and when I add, that I have a confused or indistinct *sight* of it, the word

L 2

signifies

signifies the sensation or act of seeing.

—What is necessary to distinct vision must have been explained to you in Opticks, and needs not be repeated here.

115. Colours inhere not in the coloured body, but in the light that falls upon it: and a body presents to our eye that colour which predominates in the rays of light reflected by it: and different bodies reflect different sorts of rays, according to the texture and consistency of their minute parts. Now the component parts of bodies, and the rays of light, are not in the mind; and therefore colours, as well as bodies, are things external: and the word *colour* denotes, always an external thing, and never a sensation in the mind.

116. The motion of the two eyes is nearly parallel; and yet the muscles that move the one are not connected with those that move the other. A picture of the visible object is formed in the retina of each eye; and yet the mind sees the object not double but single. The images in the retina are both inverted; and yet the object is seen, not inverted, but erect.—These facts

facts, are by some writers so explained, as if we, at first, moved our eyes in different directions, and saw objects inverted and double; and afterwards, by the power of habit, came to see things as we now do, and to move our eyes as we now move them. But this theory is liable to unanswerable objections; for which my hearers are referred to the latter part of Dr Reid's *Inquiry into the human mind on the principles of common sense*.—The motion of the eyes is parallel from the first; unless where there happens to be convulsion or disease. And it is probable, that, when an infant can with his eye take in all the parts of a visible object, he sees it, as we do, erect and single. Nor is it more strange, that the mind, by means of an inverted and double image, should see an object erect and single, than that it should perceive a visible thing by the intervention of an image, whereof it is not conscious, which is not known to the greater part of mankind, which can only be discovered by very nice experiments, and which was never heard

heard of till Kepler found it out about the middle of the last century.

117. Every part of the body being an instrument of touch, we cannot pretend to enumerate the objects and organs of this sense. Heat and cold, hardness and softness, hunger and thirst, the pain of weariness, and the pleasure of rest, and, in a word, all bodily sensations, are referred to touch, except those of smell, taste, sound, colour, and light.—In modern philosophy it has been made a question, whether distance, magnitude, and figure, be perceived by sight, by touch, or by both. The question belongs to Opticks; and the truth seems to be this: Distance, Magnitude, and Figure, are originally *perceived*, not by sight, but by touch; but we learn to *judge of them* from the informations of sight, by having observed, that certain visible appearances do always accompany and signify certain distances, magnitudes, and figures.

SECTION.

S E C T. V.

Of Consciousness or Reflection.

118. **B**Y this faculty we attend to and perceive what passes in our own minds. It is peculiar to rational beings, for the brutes seem to have nothing of it. In exerting it, the mind makes no use of any bodily organ, so far as we know. It is true, that the body and mind do mutually operate on each other; that certain bodily disorders hurt the mind; and that certain energies of the mind affect the body. This proves them to be intimately connected; but this does not prove, that any one bodily part is necessary to consciousness in the same manner as the eye, for example, is necessary to seeing.

119. Of the things perceived by this faculty, the chief is the mind itself. Every man is conscious, that he has within him a thinking active principle called a soul or mind. And this belief seems to be universal;

verfal; fo that if a man were to fay, that he was not confcious of any fuch thing, the world would fufpect him of either falfehood or infanity. Nay the general acknowledgement of the immortality of the foul, or of its exifting after the diffolution of the body, (an opinion which in one form or other is found in all nations), proves, that it is natural for mankind to confider the human foul and body as fubftances fo diftinct, that the former may live, and be happy or miferable, without the other.

120. Every man alfo believes, and holds himfelf to be abfolutely certain, that, whatever changes his body may undergo in this life, his foul always continues one and the fame. A temporary fufpenfion of all our faculties may happen in deep fleep, or in a fwoon; but we are certain, when we awake or recover, that we are the fame perfons we were before. In many things, both natural, as vegetable and animal bodies; and artificial, as fhips and towns, the fubftance may be changed, and yet the thing be fupposed to continue the fame; becaufe called by the fame name, & fituated in

in the same place; applied to the same purpose; or having its parts so united, that, though new substance may have been added from time to time, or some of the old taken away, there never was any change of the whole substance made at once. But the human soul is always the same; its substance being incorporeal, as will be shown hereafter, and consequently indivisible.

121. The things perceived by consciousness do as really exist, are as important, and may as well serve for the materials of science, as external things and bodily qualities. What it is to think, to remember, to imagine, to be angry or sorrowful, to believe or disbelieve, to approve or disapprove, we know by experience, as well as what it is to see and hear. And truth and falsehood, virtue and vice, are as real as sounds and colours, and much more essential to human happiness. Accordingly, in all cultivated languages, there are words to express memory, imagination, reason, conscience, true and false, just and unjust, right and wrong, &c.; which is a proof,

M that

that in all nations, not utterly barbarous, such things are attended to, and spoken of, as matters of importance. So much for consciousness in general. We are now to consider more particularly the several faculties comprehended in it. And first of Memory.

S E C T. VI.

Of Memory.

122. **T**HIS is that faculty, by which we acquire experience and knowledge; and without which we should at the end of the longest life be as ignorant as at its beginning. Memory presents to us ideas or thoughts of what is past, accompanied with a persuasion that they were formerly real and present. What we distinctly remember to have seen we as firmly believe to have happened, as what is now present to our senses.

123. A sound state of the brain is no doubt necessary to the right exercise of both

both memory and judgement. And hence perhaps it is, that some philosophers have held, that all our perceptions and thoughts leave upon the brain certain marks or traces, which continue there for some time, and when attended to by the mind occasion remembrance; but that, when the brain is disordered by drunkenness, or any other disease, so as not to receive or retain such marks, or so as to receive or retain them imperfectly, there is then no remembrance, or a confused one. But this is mere conjecture, incapable of proof, and indeed absurd. For how thoughts of the mind, which are surely no corporeal things, should leave upon the brain, which is corporeal, particular stamps, variously sized and shaped according to the nature of the thoughts, and how the mind should take notice of those stamps, or remember by means of them, is altogether inconceivable. We know that we do remember; but of the immediate cause of remembrance we know nothing.

124. When we remember with little or no effort, it is called remembrance simply,

M 2

or

of memory, and sometimes passive memory: when we endeavour to remember what does not immediately and (as it were) of itself occur; it is called active memory or Recollection. A ready recollection of our knowledge, at the moment when we have occasion for it, is a talent of the greatest importance. The man possessed of it is generally of good parts, and seldom fails to distinguish himself, whatever sort of business he may be engaged in. But some persons, who are remarkable for what is here called passive memory, and can remember all the words of a long discourse on once hearing it, are in other respects of no great abilities. Brutes have memory, but of recollection they seem to be incapable; for this requires rationality, and the power of contemplating and arranging our thoughts. Great memory is perhaps necessary to form great genius, but is not always a proof of it.

125. The liveliest remembrance is not so lively as the sensation that produced it; and ideas of memory do often, but not always, decay more and more, as the original

nal sensation becomes more and more remote in time. Those sensations, and those thoughts, have a chance to be long remembered, which are lively at first; and those are likely to be most lively, which are most attended to, or which are, accompanied with pleasure or pain, or with wonder, surprise, curiosity, merriment, and other lively passions.

§ 26. The art of memory, therefore, is little more than the art of attention. What we wish to remember we should attend to as far as to understand it perfectly, fixing our view particularly upon its importance or singular nature; that it may raise within us some of the passions above mentioned: and we should also beforehand disengage our mind from other things, that we may the more effectually attend to the new object which we wish to remember; that being apt to be forgotten which occurs to us when we are taken up with other things. The memories of children should be continually exercised; but to oblige them to get by heart what they do not understand, perverts their faculties, gives them a dislike to

to learning; and confirms them in habits of inattention, and inaccurate pronunciation.

127. A habit of strictly attending to that, whatever it is, in which we happen to be engaged, and of doing only one thing at one time, is of great importance to intellectual improvement. It produces clearness and readiness of comprehension, presence of mind, accuracy of knowledge, and facility of expression. Attention to our company is a principal part of politeness, and renders their conversation and behaviour both amusing and instructive to us. We ought therefore to be constantly on our guard against contracting any of those habits of indolence, or a wandering mind, which, when long persisted in, form what is called an absent man.

128. Our thoughts have for the most part a connection; so that the thought which is just now in the mind, depends partly upon that which went before, and partly serves to introduce that which follows. Hence we remember best those things whose parts are methodically disposed,

fed, and mutually connected. A regular discourse makes a more lasting impression upon the hearer than a parcel of detached sentences, and gives to his rational powers a more salutary exercise: and this may show us the propriety of conducting our studies, and all our affairs, according to a regular plan or method. When this is not done, our thoughts and our business, especially if in any degree complex, soon run into confusion.

129. The Greek and Roman orators, who sometimes had occasion to deliver very long orations, and all from memory, took pains to fix in their minds a series of objects or places naturally connected, such as the contiguous houses in a street, or the contiguous apartments in a house. By long habit, these places were so arranged in their memory, that when the first place occurred to them, it introduced the idea of the second, and the second the third, and so forward; even as when the first letter of the alphabet, or the beginning of a well-known tune, occurs to the mind, it introduces the subsequent letters and notes.

in

in the proper order. Then the orator connected the first head of his discourse with the first of these places, the second with the second, &c. by thinking of both at the same time. And thus they were enabled to recollect, without confusion, all the parts of the longest discourse. This was called the Artificial Memory. Cicero and Quintilian both speak of it, but neither of them so minutely as to make it perfectly intelligible, at least to me: nor do I know that any modern orator has ever made use of it. It seems indeed to have been a laborious way of improving memory; as Quintilian himself acknowledges. In allusion to it, we still call the parts of a discourse *places* or *topicks*, and say, *In the first place, In the second place, &c.*

130. What we perceive by two senses at once has a good chance to be remembered. Hence to read aloud, slowly, and with propriety, when one is accustomed to it, contributes greatly to remembrance. And that which we write in a good hand, without contractions, with dark-coloured ink, exactly pointed and spelled, in strait lines with

with a moderate space between them, and properly subdivided into paragraphs as the subject may require, is better remembered than what we throw together in confusion. For, by all these circumstances, attention is fixed, and the writing, being better understood, makes a deeper impression. Those things also, which are related in two or more respects, are more easily remembered than such as are related in one respect only. Hence, by most people, verse is more easily remembered than prose, because the words are related in measure as well as in sense; and rime than blank verse, because the words are related not only in sense and measure, but also by similar sounds at the end of the lines. And, in general, elegant and harmonious language is better remembered; than what is harsh and incorrect.

131. Memories differ greatly both in kind and in degree. One man remembers best one sort of things, and another another; which may in part be owing to habits contracted of attending to one sort of things more than to another: and this may be assigned as one cause of the varieties of genius that are ob-

N

servable

servable among mankind. In the early part of life, memory is commonly strong; for then the mind is disengaged, curiosity active, the spirits high, and the agreeable passions predominant. Infants easily remember, and as easily forget. A child of six years, going into a foreign country, acquires the new language, and forgets his own, in a few months. Most things are easily learned in the first part of life, especially languages. In mature age, curiosity is abated, and the spirits less lively than in youth: but men are then more capable of strict attention, and both the memory and the judgement must be considerably improved by experience and long exercise. In old age, curiosity is still more abated, and few things yield amusement, or are much attended to; and therefore memory is for the most part weak, except in regard to transactions long since past, or peculiarly suited to the present disposition.

132. To improve this faculty, we must, as already observed, cultivate habits of strict attention, not only when we read books, or hear discourses, but also in conversation, and in every part of our daily business.

business. It will also be prudent to study according to a plan, to dispose our affairs methodically, and to study nothing but what may be useful. To read a great variety of books is not necessary; but those we read should all be good ones; and we shall do well to read them slowly and deliberately, often recollecting what we have read and meditating upon it; and we should never leave a good author till we be masters of both his language and his doctrine. A list will be given hereafter of some of those books in Greek, Latin, and English, that deserve to be studied in this accurate manner. For, as Bacon well observes, "some books are to be read only in parts; others to be read, but not curiously; and some few to be read wholly, with diligence and attention." There is much good sense in the following aphorism of the same great author: "Reading makes a full man, writing an exact man, and conversation a ready man."

133. It is hardly credible to what a degree both active and passive remembrance may be improved by long practice. There are clergymen who can get a sermon by

heart in two hours, though their memory, when they began to exercise it, was rather weak than strong. And pleaders, and other orators who speak in public and *extempore*, often discover, in calling instantly to mind all the knowledge necessary on the present occasion, and every thing of importance that may have been advanced in the course of a long debate, such powers of retention and of recollection as, to the man who has never been obliged to exert himself in the same manner, are altogether astonishing.

134. Frequently to revise our knowledge; to talk about it when we have a convenient opportunity, that is, when we are in the company of those who may wish to hear us talk about it; to teach it to others; to reduce it to practice as much as possible; and to set down in writing, not on loose papers, but in books kept for the purpose, whatever may occur to us on any subject, would greatly improve both our memory and our judgement. To transcribe literally from books is of little use, or rather of none; for it employs much time, without improving any one of our faculties.

ties. But to write an abridgement of a good book may sometimes be a very profitable exercise. In general, when we would preserve the doctrines, sentiments, or facts, that occur in reading, it will be prudent to lay the book aside, and put them in writing in our own words. This practice will give accuracy to our knowledge, accustom us to recollection, improve us in the use of language, and enable us so thoroughly to comprehend the thoughts of other men as to make them in some measure our own.

135. The memory of brutes seems to serve them no further, than is necessary to the preservation of them and their offspring, and for making them useful to man. In some of them it is attended with extraordinary circumstances. Bees, for example, can see but a very little way before them, as appears from the extreme convexity of their eyes: and yet find their way, from a long excursion, to their respective homes, and seldom or never mistake a neighbouring hive for their own. In this they must be guided, not only by memory, but also by smell, or rather by some other instinct whereof

whereof we have no conception. Yet, with all the helps that he derives from instinct, or from more acute organs of sense, the memory of the most sagacious brute is to that of men almost infinitely inferior. Many brutes are quite untractable; of such the memory must be very limited. Those that are docile soon reach the height of improvement; and the arts and habits which it is in our power to impress upon them are but few. Destitute of consciousness, of reason, of recollection, of conversation, and of the powers of invention and arrangement, the extent of their knowledge must be extremely small, and their memory proportionable. Of abstract notions in regard to truth and falsehood, virtue and vice, elegance and deformity, proportions in quantity and number, law, government, religion, commerce, and other sciences and arts, which are the most important parts of human knowledge, they are utterly ignorant: nor can they ever know any thing of what has happened in time past, is likely to happen in the time to come, or is now happening at a distance.

136. But

136. But to the power of human memory, and to the possible extent of human knowledge, we can set no bounds. And what is very remarkable, the more real knowledge we acquire, the greater is our desire of knowledge, and the greater our capacity of receiving it. In a word, we seem to be susceptible of endless improvement: which is a proof, not only of the immense superiority of our nature to that of other animals, but also that our souls are formed for endless duration.

S E C T. VII.

Of Imagination.

137. I Remember to have seen a lion; I can *imagine* a griffin or a centaur though I never saw one:—he who uses these words with understanding *knows* the difference between imagination and memory, though perhaps he may not be able to *explain* it. When we remember, we have a view to real existence and past experience: when

when we *imagine*, we contemplate a notion or idea simply as it is in itself, or as we conceive it to be, without referring it to past experience or to real existence. Some writers limit the word *imagination* to the mental conception of *images* or things visible; and this may perhaps have been the original meaning of the word: but the modern use of language will justify that more general application of the term which is here given. For it would be improper to say, that men born blind must be destitute of imagination: such men may surely *invent* as well as *dream*; it is well known they can do both: and both invention and dreaming are referred to this faculty. Imagination employed in its more trivial exertions is often called Fancy. A sublime poet is a man of vast imagination: a witty author is a person of lively fancy.

138. That we may see more particularly the nature of the faculty in question, it is proper to observe here, that all things may be divided into *simple* and *complex*. The former do not seem to consist of parts that can be separated; and such are our sensations

tions of heat, cold, hunger, thirst, or of any particular sound, or simple colour. Complex things consist of parts, which may be separated and conceived separately: such are all bodies. Now all our simple ideas, that is, all our notions of simple objects, are derived from experience: a man must have *seen* colour, and light, and *heard* sound, and *felt* the pain of hunger, before he can conceive what those things are. But complex ideas, or notions of complex objects, the mind can form for itself, by supposing a number of simple or complex notions or things combined together in one assemblage. When such complex ideas are not derived from memory, we refer them to the imagination. No man ever saw a mountain of ivory; but he, who has seen ivory and a mountain, may easily *imagine* the substance of the one extended to the size and shape of the other, and thus form the idea of an ivory mountain.

139. Memory suggests nothing to us but what we have really perceived; so that a being endowed with memory, but destitute of imagination, could never invent
O any

any thing : as all invention implies novelty, and that certain things or thoughts are put together which were never so put together before. Now this inventing power is ascribed, as observed already, to the imagination or fancy, and, when regulated by good sense and applied to useful purposes, is called *genius*. One may be learned who is not ingenious ; in other words, one may have a good memory well stored with knowledge, and yet have little imagination or invention ; as, on the other hand, one may be very ingenious with little learning. But genius and learning, when they meet in one person, are mutually and greatly assistant to each other ; and, in the poetical art, Horace declares that either without the other can do little.

140. The succession of our thoughts is often regulated by memory ; as when we go over in our mind the particulars of a place we have seen, of a conversation we have heard, or of a book we have read. At other times, when our attention is not fixed on any one thing, a state of mind called a *reverie*, we may observe, that our thoughts

thoughts are continually changing, so that in a little time our imagination wanders to something very different from that which we were thinking of just before. Yet if we could remember every thing that passed through our mind during this reverie, we should probably find, that there was some relation, connection, or bond of union, between those thoughts that accompanied, or came next after, one another. The relations, or bonds of union, which thus determine the mind to associate ideas, are various.

141. First, *Resemblance* is an associating quality: that is, when we perceive, or think of, any thing, it is natural for us, at the same time, or immediately after, to think of something that is *like* it. When we hear a story, or see a person, we are apt to think of other *similar* stories or persons. Our discourse we often embellish with metaphors, allegories, and those other figures of speech, that are founded in likenesses. And when any powerful passion, as anger or sorrow, takes hold of the mind, the thoughts that occur to us have generally a

resemblance to that passion, and tend to encourage it.

142. *Contrariety* or *contrast* is another associating principle, especially when the mind is in a disagreeable state. Great cold makes us think of heat, and wish for it. Hunger and thirst put us in mind of eating and drinking. In poetry, and other works of fancy, we are sometimes pleased when we find things of *opposite* natures succeeding each other; when, for example, the *hurry* of a *battle* is interrupted, as in Homer it often is, with a descriptive simile taken from *still life* or *rural affairs*; or when, in the same fable, persons appear of *opposite* characters, and the violent is opposed to the gentle, the cunning to the generous, and the rash to the prudent.

143. Thirdly: When we think of any place which we are acquainted with, we are apt to think at the same time of the *neighbouring* places and persons: here the associating principle is *Contiguity* or *nearness of situation*. The sight of a house, in which we have formerly been happy or unhappy, renews the agreeable or disagreeable ideas that

that were formerly realized there. Hence in part arises that partiality which most people have for the town, province, or country, in which they passed their early years. Hence, on entering a church, even when no body is present, a considerate mind is apt to feel some of those religious impressions which it has formerly experienced in such places: and sentiments of a different nature arise, when we go into play-houses, ball-rooms, or apartments that we have seen appropriated to purposes of festivity.

144. Fourthly: Things related as *cause and effect* do mutually suggest each other to the mind. When we see a wound, we think of the weapon or the accident that caused it, and of the pain which is the effect of it. The idea of snow or of ice brings along with it that of cold; and we can hardly think of the sun without thinking of light and heat at the same time. The associations founded on this principle are equally strong whether the causation be real or imaginary. He who believes, that darkness and solitude are the cause of the appearance

appearance of ghosts; will find, when he is in the dark and alone, that the idea of such beings will occur to him as naturally, as if the one were really the cause of the other. It is true, that solitude and darkness may reasonably produce some degree of fear; because where we cannot see we must be in some danger; and, when every thing is silent about us, we must be at some distance from the protection and other comforts of society. But ghosts and apparitions have nothing more to do with darkness than with light: and the stories told of them will be found, on examination, to arise, either from imperfect sensations, owing to the darkness, or from those horrors which disorder the imagination when one is very much afraid, or from the folly, credulity, or falsehood of them who circulate those silly tales.

145. *Custom or habit* is a very extensive principle of association. Things and thoughts that have no other bond of union may, by appearing together, or being frequently joined together, become so closely related, that the one shall ever after introduce the other

other into the mind. Thus, in language written or spoken, the mind instantly passes from the word heard, or from the characters seen, to the thing signified; custom having so associated them that the one always reminds us of the other.—Upon associations established by custom many of the pains and pleasures of life depend. An indifferent thing may become very agreeable, or very much the contrary, according to the nature of the ideas thus connected with it; and, in like manner, in consequence of some perverse association, that which ought to make us serious may incline us to laughter.

146. Things solemn and sacred, therefore, should never be spoken of in terms of ridicule or levity; and places appropriated to the offices of religion should never be made the scene of any thing ludicrous, trifling, or unsuitable. Where these rules are not attended to, important and frivolous thoughts may be so jumbled together in the mind, as that the former shall sometimes, very unseasonably and indecently, suggest the latter. Let sacred things be always

ways accompanied with serious language and solemn circumstances : and let those, who wish to retain the government of their passions and the command of their thoughts, be careful to check in the beginning every tendency to perverse and impure associations.

147. Dresses both ugly and inconvenient become fashionable ; and custom reconciles us to the fashion, though at first, perhaps, it might appear ridiculous : which is also owing to associations founded in custom. For when we have long seen a particular form of dress worn by persons whom we love and esteem, and on occasions of the greatest festivity or solemnity, it acquires in our mind a connection with a great number of pleasing ideas ; and whatever is so connected must itself be pleasing. It will appear by and by, that, from associations founded in habit, many, or perhaps most, of those pleasing emotions are derived, which accompany the perception of that which in things visible is called *Beauty*.

148. This subject will often come in our way

way hereafter. But before we leave it now, it may be proper to remark, that some people contract strange habits of what may be termed External Association, of joining together two actions that have no natural connection, and appear very awkward when they are so joined. You may have seen a boy button and unbutton his coat all the while he is repeating his catechism; and we have heard of a lawyer, who could not go on with his pleading, unless he was continually winding a piece of packthread about his finger. It should be our care, to guard against these and the like absurd habits, and to be very thankful to those who caution us against them; for the eyes of a friend are, in a matter of this kind, much more to be depended on than our own.

149. It was already observed, that the talent of invention applied to useful purposes is called *genius*: but it requires experience and good sense to enable one so to apply it. Every person is not a man of genius, nor is it necessary that he should. For in human society, as in an army, tho' there must be a few to contrive and com-
P mand,

mand, far the greater number have nothing to do but to obey; and the efforts of the multitude are necessary to public good, as well as the contrivance of those who direct them. Besides, if every man were a man of genius, there would be so much ambition in the world, and so many projectors, and such a multiplicity of opposite interests, as would confound the order of human affairs. To the perfection of genius, learning and application are necessary, as well as natural talents. It is true, that some men of great genius have had little learning; but this was their misfortune: and it can hardly be doubted, that with a better education they would have made a better figure. Without industry and attention, genius is good for nothing.

150. Many are the degrees, and the varieties, of human genius. One man has a genius in mechanics; another, in architecture; a third, in the conduct of military affairs; or in painting, geometry, music, poetry, eloquence, &c.; and one man may make great progress and contrive many improvements in one art, who could
not

not have been so successful in another. And some men there are, of talents so universal, as to discover genius in every thing to which they apply themselves. It is not easy, nor perhaps possible, to account for these peculiarities and varieties of intellectual character. They may be partly owing to habits contracted in early years; and partly, and perhaps chiefly, to that particular constitution of mind, by which, as well as by his face and other bodily peculiarities, one man is distinguished from another.

151. But, though we may be at a loss to explain the *efficient cause* of this variety, it is easy to see its *final cause*, that is, the intention of Providence in appointing it. It is this that makes men take to different pursuits and employments; which renders them mutually useful to one another, and prevents too violent oppositions of interest. And hence mankind enjoy a variety of conveniencies; arts and sciences are invented and improved; and many sources are opened of commerce and friendly intercourse, whereby the circulation of truth is

P 2

promoted,

promoted, and the bounds of social virtue enlarged.

152. When one takes a view of the arts that flourish in society, one is apt to wonder at two things; first, their vast number and mutual subserviency; and secondly, that men should be found who voluntarily make choice of one or other of all the employments necessary in civilised life. This consideration affords a proof of the extreme pliability of the human mind, as well as of the goodness of Providence. For, though some professions and trades are of low esteem, we find, that in every condition honest industry, with contentment, may be happy. Let us therefore learn to set a proper value on all the useful arts of life, and on all those who practise them with integrity and industry.

153. The imagination is subject to certain disorders, which may be comprehended under the opposite extremes of Levity and Melancholy. Levity produces thoughtlessness, vanity, and contempt of others. Whatever therefore tends to make men considerate and humble may be proposed

as a remedy for this disease, or rather as a means of preventing it. Habits of consideration may be acquired by studying history, geometry, and those parts of philosophy which lead to the observation of life and manners.—Persons in danger from this disease should be kept at a distance from flattery and novels, and taught, that honesty and attention to business are in every station respectable, and that contempt and misery never fail to attend a life of idleness or fantastic ambition. The company of those who are wiser and better than they, will also be of great and peculiar benefit to persons of this character : and some experience of adversity may be very serviceable in promoting that knowledge of one's self, and that fellow-feeling for others, which repress vanity, by producing consideration and a lowly mind.

154. The practice of turning every thing into joke and ridicule is a dangerous levity of imagination. Wit and humour, when natural, are very useful and very pleasing. But that studied and habitual jocularitv, which I here speak of, and which some people

people affect, makes one a disagreeable and tiresome companion. It generally arises from vanity; it renders conversation unprofitable, and too often immoral; and it gradually perverts the understanding, both of those who practise it, and of those who take pleasure in hearing it. Our serious concerns demand our first attention: wit, humour, and merriment, may be used in the way of relaxation, but are not the business for which we were sent into this world.

155. An imagination disordered by Melancholy is one of the greatest calamities incident to human nature. In order to prevent it, we ought by all means to avoid idleness, and lead an active life; to be temperate and social; to cherish every cheerful affection, as good nature, good humour, patience, forgiveness, piety, humility, and benevolence, by all which the health of both the mind and body is effectually promoted; and to check the gloomy passions of anger, revenge, pride, suspicion, jealousy, misanthropy, excessive anxiety, and immoderate sorrow, which are all productive

ductive of misery and disease both mental and corporeal. They, who are in danger from a melancholy imagination, will do well to study nothing but what is amusing and practical; to abstain from tragical narratives, controversy, and law-suits, which wear out the spirits to no purpose; to use moderation in study, as in every thing else; and to have recourse every day, more or less according to circumstances, to bodily exercise, innocent amusement, fresh air, and chearful company. To guard against superstition and enthusiasm, by forming right notions of God's adorable nature and providence; and to avoid, as one would the pestilence, all books and all conversations that are likely to infuse impious, irreligious, or immoral opinions, is the duty, not of those only whose minds are oppressed with melancholy, but of all mankind without exception.

S E C T.

S E C T. VIII.

Of Dreaming.

156. **T**HAT may be very useful, of which we cannot discover the use: and Dreams, though we know little of their nature, may yet be of great importance in our constitution. Most of the few unconnected remarks that follow are offered as mere conjecture; for it would be vain to attempt to treat this subject in a scientific manner.—Most men dream, but all do not; and sometimes we dream more than at other times. In dreams we mistake ideas of imagination for real things. But when awake, and in our perfect mind, we never mistake a reality for a dream. Realities are perceived intuitively. We cannot prove by argument, that we are now awake; for we know of nothing more evident to prove it by: and it is essential to every proof to be clearer than that which is to be proved. But it is impossible for us to doubt of our being

being awake: such is the law of our nature. And our experience of the delusions of dreaming never affects, and is not supposed to affect, the certainty of human knowledge.

157. In good health we often dream of our ordinary business; which however is considerably disguised by imaginary circumstances. Such dreams partake of the nature of allegory: they resemble common life, and yet they differ from it. This the poets attend to; and, when they have occasion to describe any person's dream, they generally make it contain some shadowy representation of what is supposed to be in his mind when awake; and this we approve of, because we know it is natural. Disagreeable dreams accompany certain bodily disorders; and when there is any tendency to fever in the human frame, they are very fatiguing and tiresome: whence a man of prudence, who is free from superstition, may make discoveries concerning his health, and learn from his dreams to live more temperately than usual, or take more or less exercise, or have recourse

Q

to

to other means, in order to avert the impending evil.

158. Dreams may sometimes be useful, as fables are, for conveying moral instruction. If, for example, we dream that we are in violent anger, and strike a blow which kills a man, the horror we feel on the occasion may dispose us, when awake, to form resolutions against violent anger, lest it should at one time or other prompt us to a like perpetration. In the *Tatler* (Numb. 117.) there is an account of a dream that conveys a sublime and instructive lesson of morality.—Dreams are a striking instance of the activity of the human soul, and of its power of creating, as it were, without the help of the senses, ideas that give it amusement, and command its whole attention. Sometimes, however, in sleep, our memory, and sometimes our judgement, seem to have forsaken us: we believe the wildest absurdities, and forget the most remarkable events of our life. It is at least possible, that this temporary suspension of our faculties may make the soul act more vigorously at other times, even as our

our bodily powers derive refreshment from rest.

159. Dreams may in other respects be friendly to our intellectual nature. To think too long, or too intensely, on any one subject, is hurtful to health, and sometimes even to reason. They may therefore be useful in giving variety to our thoughts, and forcing the mind to exert itself, for a while, in a new direction. And persons who dream most frequently may perhaps, from their constitution, have more need, than others have, of this sort of amusement; which is the more probable, because it is found in fact, that those people are most apt to dream who are most addicted to intense thinking. In this view, even disagreeable dreams are useful: as a life of violent activity, of hardship, and even of danger, is recommended, and known to give relief, to persons oppressed with melancholy, and other mental disorders.

160. In antient times, the dreams of some men were prophetic; but, as we are not prophets, we have no reason to think that ours are of that sort. It may
Q 2 happen

happen indeed, in the revolution of chances, that a dream shall resemble a future event. But this is rare; and, when it happens, not more wonderful, than that an irregular clock should now and then point at the right hour. Nor can it be admitted, that dreams are suggested by invifible beings; as they are for the moft part mere trifles, and depend fo much on the ftate of our mind and body. The foul in herfelf feems to poffefs vivacity fufficient to account for all the odd appearances that occur in fleep. For even when we are awake, and in health, very ftange thoughts will fometimes arife in the mind. And, in certain difeafes, waking thoughts are often as extravagant as the wildeft dreams.

161. Our dreams are exceedingly various; but that they fhould be fo, is not at all furprifing. A very flight impreffion made on our organs of fenfe in fleep; a found heard imperfectly; a greater or lefs degree of heat; our breathing in any refpect interrupted, by the ftate of the ftomach and bowels, by an awkward poffition of the head, or by external things affecting

fecting our organs of respiration ; the temperature of the air in general, or that of our bedchamber in particular ;—these, and the like casualties, as well as the tenor of our thoughts through the day, the state of our health, and the passions that may happen to predominate in our mind, have all considerable influence in giving variety to our nocturnal imaginations. Uncommon dreams, therefore, should give us no concern. In these visionary appearances, uniformity would be more wonderful, than the greatest variety. Some people, it is true, often find the same dream recur upon them. Possibly this may be in part owing to habit ; they dream the same thing a third or a fourth time, because they have talked or thought of it more than of other dreams. Hence, with respect to disagreeable dreams, we may learn a caution ; which is, to banish them from our thoughts as soon as possible, and never speak of them at all. It is indeed a vulgar observation, but there is truth in it, that they who seldom talk of dreams are not often troubled with them,

S E C T,

S E C T. IX.

Of some Secondary Sensations.

162. **O**F the *perceptive* powers of man there still remain to be considered, Conscience; whereby we distinguish between vice and virtue; and Reason, whereby we perceive the difference between truth and falsehood. These, to prevent unnecessary repetition, we pass by at present, as they will come in our way hereafter, the former in Moral Philosophy, the latter in Logic.—If I had not wished to avoid troubling my hearers with too many divisions and subdivisions in the beginning, I would have divided Sensation into Primary and Secondary. The former has been spoken of already. The latter I now enter upon; and indeed could hardly bring it in sooner; what has been said on the subject of imagination being necessary as an introduction to it. These secondary faculties of sensation have by some writers been called

called Internal Senses, by others Emotions. The name is of little importance: the nature of the thing will soon appear.

163. We perceive colours and figures by the eye; we also perceive that some colours and figures are *beautiful*, and others not. This power of perceiving Beauty, which the brutes have not though they *see* as well as we, I call a secondary sense. We perceive sounds by the ear; we also perceive, that certain combinations of sound have *harmony*, and that others are dissonant. This power of perceiving harmony, called in common language a musical ear, is another secondary sense, which the brutes have not, and of which many men who hear well enough are utterly destitute. Of these secondary senses there are no doubt many in the human constitution. I confine myself to those of Novelty, Sublimity, Beauty, Imitation, Harmony, and Ridicule; which, together with Sympathy, which I shall also describe, form what is commonly called *good taste*. The pleasures received by the Secondary senses are, by Addison, in the sixth volume of the *Spectator*,

tator, and by Akenfide, in the title of a poem which he wrote on the subject, termed *Pleasures of Imagination*.

164. OF NOVELTY. Things in themselves indifferent, or even disagreeable, may be agreeable when new; and Novelty in general has a charm in it, of which every rational, or every human being at least, is sensible. Hence our passion for variety, for amusement, for news, for strange sights, and for knowledge in general. The pleasure we take in new things arises from the active nature of man. We are never happy unless employed about something; and when we have nothing to do in the way of business or amusement, the mind becomes languid and of course uneasy. Yet into this state we are apt to fall, when there is nothing to rouse our attention, or give play to our faculties. For when we have long been conversant about one set of objects, the mind comprehends them so easily, that they give it no exercise. In this case, a new object occurring gives an impulse to the mind, and puts it upon exerting itself; and the exertion, if moderate, is agreeable,

If

If the new object occasion surprise, or any other lively and pleasing emotion, its novelty will be still more interesting, because it will convey to the mind a more sprightly and perhaps a more permanent impulse.

165. Some things are more disagreeable at first, than they come to be afterwards, which may be owing to one or other of these two causes. Either the new object may have required, in order to its being comprehended, a violent and painful exertion of the faculties; as in the case of one entering upon a new study, or a new course of life: or we may have fixed our first attention on what seemed disagreeable in the new object; not discovering its agreeable qualities till we were better acquainted with it. Hence let us learn, that a good course of life, though somewhat unpleasant at first, ought not on that account to be relinquished; for we may be assured it will in time become pleasant, if persisted in.— It is remarkable, that men sometimes contract a most violent liking to certain tastes that were at first extremely offensive, as those of tobacco and strong liquors. This

R

depends

depends on causes in which the mind has little concern. It may be, that, by the constant use of such things, the stomach or the palate, and of course the animal spirits, are reduced to such a state as to be uneasy in the want of them. The part of prudence therefore is, to abstain from such things altogether, which requires no effort; rather than to hazard the acquisition of a habit which it may be almost impossible to overcome. Unnatural pleasures of this sort it is no evil to be without, but it may be a fatal evil to acquire a relish for.

166. In all the arts that minister to rational pleasure, variety is studied, that the mind may be refreshed with a succession of novelties. The prose-writer, where it can be done conveniently, varies the length, the sound, and the syntax, of contiguous clauses and sentences; and amuses the reader's fancy with metaphors, similitudes, and other apposite figures of speech. The poet varies the structure of contiguous verses; and, in framing his fable, is careful to bring in events that are both probable and unexpected, and persons who differ from each

each other in character, appearance, and adventures. So in the other fine arts. In the works of nature there is great uniformity, and at the same time the most unbounded variety: so that he who studies them is continually delighted with new and wonderful discoveries; and yet is never perplexed by their multiplicity, because order, proportion, and fitness, prevail through the whole system.

167. The taste for novelty is an important part of the human constitution. It is the source of much amusement, and prompts men to labour in the acquisition of knowledge. It is, besides, one of our first passions. You cannot gratify a child more, than by showing him something new, or telling him a wonderful story. The same novelties are not equally captivating to all. Some seek after new attainments in science; some wander through the world to visit different nations; some explore the wonders of inanimate nature, and some the characters of men; some read history, some study the fine arts, some are curious in whatever relates to mechanism, and some

R 2

mind

mind little more than the news of the day ; some amuse themselves with collecting pictures, prints, manuscripts, medals, shells, minerals ; and some are fond of old, and others of new books. Thus men take to different pursuits and employments, and every part of knowledge is cultivated.

168. OF SUBLIMITY. Things of great magnitude, as a large building, a high mountain, a broad river, a wide prospect, the ocean, the sky, &c. fill the mind of the beholder with admiration and pleasing astonishment, and with respect to this sensation are called Sublime. Great height and depth, and great number too, as an army, a navy, a long succession of years, eternity, &c. are sublime objects, because they fill our minds with the same pleasing astonishment. In contemplating such things, we are conscious of something like an expansion or elevation of our faculties, as if we were exerting our whole capacity to comprehend the vastness of the object.

169. Whatever it be that raises in us this pleasurable astonishment, is accounted sublime, whether connected with quantity
or

or number, or not. Hence loud sounds, like those of thunder, cannon, a full organ, a storm; hence those fictions in poetry, that produce an imaginary, and not painful, terror; hence any uncommon degree of virtue, of genius, or even of bodily strength; and hence those affections which elevate the soul, as fortitude, devotion, and universal benevolence, or which are, in their objects, causes, or effects, connected with great number or great quantity; are all denominated sublime, and fill our minds with the same delightful astonishment and admiration.

170. The Deity,—the source of happiness and the standard of perfection; who creates, preserves, pervades, and governs all things; whose power is omnipotent, whose wisdom is perfect, whose goodness is unbounded, whose greatness is incomprehensible; who was from all eternity, and of whose dominion there can be no end;—He is undoubtedly, and, beyond all comparison, the most sublime object which it is possible to conceive or to contemplate; and of all created sublimity (if I may so speak)

speak) his works exhibit the most perfect and most astonishing examples. There are, no doubt, sublime operations of human art, as ships of war, cathedral-churches, palaces, mounds for repelling the sea, &c. But, in respect of greatness, these are nothing, when we compare them with mountains, volcanoes, the ocean, the expanse of heaven, clouds and storms, thunder and lightning, the sun and moon, the solar system, the universe.

171. Poetry, Painting, and Music, are called Fine arts; because, though not necessary to life, they are highly ornamental. Architecture is also a fine art; for it improves building to a degree far beyond what is necessary. And by each of these arts the sublime is attainable. That is sublime music which inspires sublime affections, as courage and devotion; or which by its sonorous harmonies overwhelms the mind with a pleasing astonishment. Architecture is sublime, when it is large, lofty, and durable, and at the same time so simple and well-proportioned as that the eye can take in all its greatness at once,

once. For a number of little parts and ornaments take away from the sublimity of a great building, though they may sometimes add to its beauty. Painting is sublime, when it exhibits men invested with great qualities, such as bodily strength; or actuated by sublime passions, as devotion or valour; or when it successfully imitates great visible objects, artificial or natural, as mountains, precipices, palaces, storms, cataracts, volcanoes, and the like.

172. Poetry is sublime; first, when it elevates the mind, and makes it, as it were, superior to the cares and troubles of this world: secondly, when it infuses any sublime affection, as devotion, valour, universal benevolence, the love of virtue and of our country: thirdly, when it affects the mind with an awful and imaginary, but not unpleasing horror: fourthly, when it describes the sentiments or actions of those persons whose character is sublime: and fifthly, when it conveys a lively idea of any grand appearance, natural, artificial, or imaginary. That style is sublime, which makes us readily conceive any great object
or

or sentiment in a lively manner; and this is often done when the words are very plain and simple.

173. It is true, that poets and orators, when they describe sublime objects, do often elevate their style with tropes and figures, and high-sounding expressions. And this is suitable to the nature of human speech. For, when we speak of any thing which we consider as great, it is natural for us, even in common discourse, to raise our voice, and pronounce with more than usual solemnity. But in the use of bold figures and sonorous language great caution is requisite. For, if they be too frequent, or seem to be too much sought after, or if they be not accompanied with a correspondent elevation of thought, they become ridiculous, and are called Bombast or False Sublime.—Even in brutes there may be qualities which command our admiration and astonishment: whence lions, horses, and elephants, are sublime objects; not so much because their bodies are large, though this may have some effect, as on account of their uncommon strength,

strength, sagacity, or contempt of danger.

174. Though real greatness always raises admiration, littleness does not always excite the contrary passion of contempt. That which is little may be beautiful or useful, or ingeniously contrived, and so give pleasure in various ways, and sometimes raise admiration too;—for who does not admire the beauty of a rose, and the wonderful instincts of the bee! Littleness is then offensive, and is called meanness, when we are disappointed by it, and meet with it in a place, where we had reason to expect something better.—There is a meanness in certain words and phrases, which for that reason ought to be avoided on every solemn occasion, and in all elegant writing. Important sentiments expressed in mean words raise indignation or laughter. Think what effect a sermon would have, if it were mixed with vulgar proverbs, or broad Scotch words. Now those are mean words, which are not used except by illiterate or by affected persons, or on very familiar occasions. Common pro-

S

verbs,

verbs, customary forms of compliment, ungrammatical expressions, cant phrases, and provincial barbarisms, have all more or less of this meanness; and, however they may pass on common occasions, or when people mean to talk ludicrously, will always give great offence in compositions that aim at sublimity or elegance. But of this more hereafter.

175. The contemplation of the Divine Nature, and of the works of creation and providence, will no doubt constitute our supreme and final felicity. To prepare us for such contemplation, and raise our minds above the present world, the Deity has been pleased to endow us with a capacity of receiving pleasure, even in this life, from the view of what is good or eminently great. Our taste for the sublime, cherished into a habit, and directed to proper objects, may therefore promote our moral improvement, by leading us to contemplate the Creator in his wonderful works; by keeping us at a distance from vice, which is the vilest of all things; and by recommending virtue for its intrinsic dignity and loveliness.

176. OF

176. OF BEAUTY. This term is applied to many sorts of agreeable things: we speak of beautiful language, and of a beautiful song, as well as of a beautiful face. At present I speak of visible beauty chiefly; which may belong, first to *colour*, secondly to *figure*, thirdly to *attitude* or *gesture*, and fourthly to *motion*.—In general it may be observed, that the pleasure we take in looking at what is beautiful, a rose for example, is very different in kind from the pleasure that attends the contemplation of a sublime object, as a great cataract, or a huge and craggy mountain. The latter sensation (if it may be so called) seems to rouse and elevate the mind, the former to compose it: the one is solemn and serious; the other has a mixture of gladness in it, which disposes the face of the beholder to a smile. Beauty and greatness may be united in the same object, in which case they mutually adorn each other. The rainbow in its colours and circular form is extremely beautiful; and at the same time very sublime on account of its apparent magnitude and elevation.

177. COLOURS are beautiful, first, when they convey to the mind a lively sensation, as white and red; secondly, when they cherish the organ of sight, as green; thirdly, when they have that character which we term delicacy, and yield a sensation both lively and gentle, as pale red, and and light blue. But, fourthly, the beauty of a colour depends chiefly on the agreeableness of the ideas it conveys to the mind; for the same colour which in one thing is very beautiful may in another be very ugly. The verdure of the fields, for example, is delightful, because it leads us to think of fruitfulness, fragrance, and many other pleasant things; but greenness in the human face would be horrible, because it would suggest the notion of pain, of disease, or of something unnatural.

178. Colours that look as if they were stained or sullied, or which are so indefinite that one knows not what name to give them, are not often considered as beautiful. But those gradations of colour, which we see in flowers, in the plumage of some birds, in the rainbow, in the evening and morning

morning sky, and in many other natural appearances, are beautiful in the highest degree; when the colours so melt away into one another, that, though we discern the change, we cannot mark where the one ends and the other begins. The delicacy wherewith they are blended so far surpasses the ordinary efforts of human skill, that we cannot behold it without admiration. —In general, every colour is beautiful, that brings along with it the agreeable idea of perfection, of health, of convenience, of intellectual or moral virtue, or of any other sort of excellence. Negroes love their own colour for the same reason that we love ours; because they always see it; because all the people they love have it; and because none are without it but those who are thought to be strangers and enemies. This at least must be the negro's way of thinking, as long as he remains in his own country, or till he have the singular good fortune to find friends among white people. So much for beauty of colour.

179. Perfection and skill are always agreeable; and whatever suggests them to
the

the mind must be so too, and, if visible, is intitled to be called beautiful. For this reason it seems to be, that figures so well proportioned and so complete, as circles, squares, ellipses, hexagons, &c. convey to us the notion of beauty. Want of proportion in figures is not agreeable, and therefore not beautiful, because it makes us think of inconvenience, unskilfulness, or imperfection. Figures, as they appear in furniture, in architecture, or in any other work of art, are more or less beautiful, according as they convey to us, more or less, the idea of skill, convenience, and usefulness. In fact, the beauty of things depends very much, as Socrates rightly thought, upon their utility: for if a thing be useless, we cannot like it; if we do not like it, it will give us no pleasure; and of all beauty it is the character, to be pleasing. Were the horse, as slow as the snail, we should be more inclined to dislike his unwieldy size, than to admire his fine shape.

180. That form of the human body is accounted beautiful, which conveys the idea of bodily perfection. Now the human
body

body is in its most perfect state in youth; and therefore, in respect of *shape*, a youthful body is more elegant than that of an infant or old man. Another reason may be given for this, as follows.—In all beautiful animals, and in all the most beautiful parts of animals, the figure is bounded rather by curves, than by straight lines; except where these last may be necessary, as in the legs of animals, to strength and convenience. If the back and the breast of a fine horse were bounded by right lines, instead of that flowing curve which winds so gracefully about them, every one must be sensible, that the beauty of the shape would be lost. Now, in the outlines of the body of an infant, the curves are rather too much bent, on account of the redundancy of flesh compared with the smallness of the size; in the body of an old man they are too little bent, and approach to right lines, on account of the decay of moisture: in youth they are neither too much bent nor too little, but a middle between both; and then the *shape* of the body is most perfect.

181. In

181. In the works of nature, the greatest usefulness is often united with perfect beauty of colour and figure: and the more we study them, the more beautiful they appear; because we become the more sensible of their utility, as well as better acquainted with their form. In them too, that which we call beauty is generally smooth, or seems to be so; and is rather small than great, that is, rather below the usual proportion than above it. A craggy mountain is a sublime object, and its crags may add to its sublimity; but a beautiful hill is, or appears to be, smooth. The statue of Minerva may be tall, dignity being her character; but a gigantic Venus would be absurd. So much for beauty of *shape* or *figure*.

182. Those GESTURES are graceful, which show the body to advantage; or which are assumed with ease, and may continue a considerable time without giving pain; or which are suitable to the nature of the person or animal, and to the passion or sentiment that is supposed to be in the person's mind, provided that passion or sentiment be

be such as we approve. And no gesture is graceful, which conveys any disagreeable idea of unwieldiness, infirmity, constraint, affectation, or any evil passion.

183. The same remarks may be made on beauty of MOTION. Those motions in general are graceful; which are performed with ease; which imply bodily perfection; and which are naturally expressive of agreeable passions or sentiments in the mind of the person who moves. The motion of some inanimate things is very beautiful; as that of smoke ascending slowly in the sky, of unbroken waves in the sea, and of flags and streamers flying in the wind. The first pleases, as an emblem of tranquillity; the second, on account of the smoothness, greatness, and uniformity; and the last, by the glare of colours, by the easy curvature, and by suggesting agreeable ideas of busy life.—The characteristics of beauty, according to some authors, are uniformity, variety, and proportion. How far each of these may be necessary to form beauty, and why each of them gives pleasure, will perhaps appear from what has been said.

T

184. That

184. That which in the smallest compass exhibits the greatest variety of beauty, is a fine human face. The features are of *various* sizes and forms; the corresponding ones exactly *uniform*; and each has that *shape*, *size*, *position*, and *proportion*, which is most *convenient*. Here too is the greatest beauty of *colours*, which are blended, varied, and disposed, with marvellous *delicacy*. But the chief beauty of the countenance arises from its expression, of sagacity, good nature, cheerfulness, modesty, and other moral and intellectual virtues. Without such expression, no face can be truly beautiful; and with it, none can be really ugly. Human beauty, therefore, at least that of the face, is not merely a corporeal quality; but derives its origin and essential characters from the soul: and almost any person may in some degree acquire it, who is at pains to improve his understanding, to repress criminal thoughts, and to cherish good affections; as every one must lose it, whatever features or complexion there may be to boast of, who leaves the mind uncultivated,

tivated, or a prey to evil passions, or a slave to trifling pursuits.

185. OF IMITATION. Man is of all animals the most prone to imitation, and takes great delight in it. By imitating others, we learn to speak and walk, and do many other things, long before we could either attend to rules, or understand them. Many of the sports of children are imitations of the actions of men : and we find, that, in most nations, dramatic performances, which are also imitations of what happens in real life, are much attended to, and greatly esteemed as an amusement.

186. We receive pleasure from seeing a good imitation, though the original be indifferent, or perhaps even disagreeable. A common plant we view with indifference, and a dead man we could not see without pain ; but a good picture of either would give pleasure ; and a picture, equally good, of a beautiful object would please still more. And this pleasure arises chiefly from our admiration of the skill displayed in the work : for admiration is an agreeable emotion ; and it gratifies a sound mind.

to see any thing perfect, or advancing to perfection.

187. Poetry, Painting, and Music, are called *fine arts*, for a reason formerly given. They are also called *imitative arts*; because in them the appearances or operations of nature are, or are supposed to be, imitated; in painting, by colour; in poetry, by language; and in music, by sound. The contemplation of nature is delightful to the human soul; and nothing that is unnatural, or contrary to nature, can please a well-informed mind. And therefore, the fine arts, being all intended to give pleasure, must exhibit either what is according to nature, or what is similar to it; either what is real, or what is likely and probable.

188. That Pictures are imitations of nature, is obvious; and in them may be imitated almost every thing visible, not only animals and inanimate things, but also the passions and emotions of the mind; for these last produce visible appearances in the look and gesture, by which they are known, and which a painter may delineate. But, as no more than the events of one instant
can

can be seen at one instant, and as the whole picture strikes the eye at once, the subject of every painting must be *one* event or appearance, or must at least be such a combination of appearances, as may be supposed to be contiguous in place, and to be seen at one and the same time. The progress, therefore, of action, or of thought, painting cannot imitate. However, by exhibiting visible things in those attitudes, in which they are never seen except when they move, it may give a very lively idea of certain kinds of motion; as of rolling billows, ascending smoke, trees waving in the wind, fluttering robes and streamers, and animal bodies running, walking, swimming, or flying. Those thoughts that produce no visible change in the appearance of the body, cannot be expressed in a picture.

189. Language, the instrument of poetical imitation, is applicable to all subjects, and may with the greatest accuracy imitate and describe human actions, passions, and sentiments, in each period of their progress, as well as every appearance in the animal
or

or inanimate world.—It has been doubted, whether poetry be an *imitation*, or a *representation*, of nature. The controversy is of little moment, and may perhaps be thus determined. If we consider it as an art, that exhibits, not what is real, but only what is likely or probable, we must call poetry imitative; because there is something in it which is not in nature: for it is essential to an *imitation* to be in some respect or other different from the original. Ideas conveyed to the fancy by good poetical description would, if delineated by the painter, and made visible by means of colour, be found to resemble natural things; and if such a picture be an imitation, the description whence it is copied must be so too. *Real* things may indeed be *truly* described in poetical numbers; but this is not common; nor would this be any thing else than history in verse: it being the business of the poet (as will be shown hereafter) to represent things not as they are, but rather as they might be. This reasoning refers chiefly to narrative and descriptive poems. In Dramatic poetry, the imitation

tation of human action is obvious and unquestionable.—Whether music be imitative, will be seen by and by.—Architecture is an useful and noble art, but cannot be called Imitative. Only the pillars in old cathedral churches are said to have been framed in imitation of rows of trees, to which indeed they bear a great similitude; the people who invented this mode of building having, it seems, annexed some notion of sanctity to that appearance; probably because men had been accustomed, before the use of temples, to perform the rites of their religion under the shade of trees in a grove:

190. So great is the pleasure we receive from seeing nature well imitated, that the representation of human misfortunes upon the stage, or in poems, gives delight, even while it infuses the painful passions of pity and sorrow. This is owing, partly to the agitation produced in the mind of the reader or spectator by the circumstances of the story; partly, to the art displayed in the representation by the player, or by the poet in the narrative; partly, to our being
conscious,

conscious, that what we read or see is not real, but imaginary, distress, (for to those children who mistake it for real it is found to give pain instead of amusement); and partly, and perhaps chiefly, to the nature of pity, which, though a painful passion, is in the exercise accompanied with several gratifications; such as our consciousness of its being praiseworthy in itself, ornamental to our nature, useful in society, and amiable in the eyes of our brethren of mankind.

191. OF HARMONY. That the sense of harmony, commonly called a musical ear, is a distinct faculty from the sense of hearing, appears from this; that many men receive no pleasure from music who hear very well, and that some who are dull of hearing are very fond of music: and other facts might be mentioned that prove the same thing. Observe, that, in the language of art, harmony and melody are distinguished; the latter being the agreeable effect of a single series of musical tones; and the former, the agreeable effect produced by two or more series of musical tones
founded

founded at the same time. Observe further, that melody gives pleasure to all who have a musical ear, our taste for it being natural, though very capable of improvement; whereas harmony is little relished, except by those who have studied it, or have been much accustomed to hear it. Yet harmony is in some degree pleasing to most people; its essential laws being so well founded in nature, that no body who understands them questions their propriety.

192. Music consists of sound and motion. The peculiar motion of any piece of music is called its rhythm or number, or, in common language, its time. When a tune is accompanied with the drum, or with a dance, we hear the rhythm in the sound of the feet, or of the drumsticks. Rhythm belongs also to verse, and even to prose: for the pauses and the continuity of pronunciation, and the interchange of short and long, or of emphatic and non-emphatic, syllables, may all be imitated by the drum, or by the hand striking on a board. Do not confound *rhythm* with *rime*. Rhythm is a Greek word, and means what has been just now said. Rime is a modern word,

U

and

and in English denotes the similar sounds that terminate contiguous verses in certain sorts of poetry.

193. By its sounds music may imitate sounds; and by its motion, motions. But irregular motions, or inharmonious sounds, it cannot imitate; because every thing in this art must be regular and harmonious. Its imitative powers, therefore, are very limited. And music may be strictly imitative, and yet intolerably bad; or not at all imitative, and yet perfectly good. The imitation of nature is, therefore, not essential to this art, as it is to poetry and painting. Consequently music pleases, not because it imitates nature, but for some other reasons which may be explained as follows.

194. First: Some sounds, especially when continued, are pleasing in themselves, tho' they have neither meaning nor modulation: such is the murmur of groves, winds, and waters. Musical sounds, even when heard separate, are all pleasing in themselves, or ought to be so; and the more they resemble the tones of a good human voice, the more pleasing they are, and the
more

more perfect.—Secondly: Some tones, founded at the same time, have an agreeable, and others a disagreeable effect: the former are called *Concords*, the latter *Discords*. All concords are not equally agreeable, nor all discords equally harsh; and the art of harmony lies in blending the harsher with the sweeter concords, or even with discords, in such a manner as most effectually to please the ear. The artful management of this matter is another source of the pleasure we derive from music.

195. Thirdly: In all regular music, variety and proportion are united, and have a pleasing effect upon the mind, similar to that which they have in things visible; that is, they gently exercise the faculties, without bewildering or fatiguing them, and they suggest the agreeable ideas of contrivance and skill. But in what manner variety and proportion enter into the composition of music, can be explained to those only, who know something both of the practice and of the theory of the art.—One artifice however may be mentioned, which the most unskilful may understand.

Some pieces of music are contrived with the express purpose of introducing apparent confusion ; as Fugues, in which different instruments, or voices, take up the same air, but not all at the same time, so that one is, as it were, the echo of the other ; and yet the general result is not confusion, which one would expect, but perfect harmony : which gives an agreeable surprise, and heightens our admiration of the author's skill, and of the dexterity of the performers.

196. Fourthly : Music is agreeable, which infuses into the mind, or prepares it for being affected with, agreeable passions. Now, as all the rules of the art tend to give pleasure, all the passions it can raise must be of the agreeable kind. It may dispose the soul to devotion, gladness, courage, compassion, or benevolence ; but has no expression for impiety, cowardice, anger, envy, or malice. The meaning, however, or expression of music is not determinate, unless it be united with poetry, or language : so that the most perfect music is *song* ; in which elegant words, distinctly

ly

ly pronounced, give significancy to melody well modulated by the voice, and enforced by suitable harmonies. And therefore, music merely instrumental is to a certain degree imperfect; unless we are led by custom, or by some outward circumstance, to assign it a definite meaning.

197. Fifthly: All music is agreeable, which conveys agreeable thoughts to the mind of the hearer. We have heard it formerly in an agreeable place perhaps, or performed by an agreeable person, or accompanied with agreeable words, or some other pleasing circumstance. Hence, when we hear it again, we hear it with pleasure, because it suggests some pleasing recollection, or some idea at least of former happiness. From this principle, a great deal of the pleasure may be accounted for, which we derive from music, especially from that of our own country.

198. That the sense of harmony is no unimportant part of the human constitution, will appear, when we consider, that in all civilised, and many unpolished nations, music has ever been accounted agreeable

able as an amusement, and useful as a means of inspiring courage, devotion, gladness, and other good affections. Polybius, a grave and wise historian, ascribes the humanity of the ancient Arcadians to their knowledge of this art, and the barbarity of their neighbours the Cynethians to their neglect of it. And as he was a native of Arcadia, we can hardly suppose that a man of his penetration could be mistaken in a matter of this kind.

199. OF LAUGHTER. To perceive an object, and to laugh at it, are different things: brutes perceive, but never laugh. Ridiculous is one of the distinguishing characters of man. Some things excite laughter mixed with contempt or disapprobation; as the absurdities of a lying traveller, a boastful soldier, or a great miser: such things are properly termed *ridiculous*. Other things, which provoke laughter merely, without contempt or disapprobation, may be called *indiscreet*. Such are the tricks of monkeys and young cats: and such, though in all other respects totally different, are those examples of wit and humour, which

which we laugh at in books or persons whom we admire and esteem. Here we are to consider ludicrous objects chiefly; as laughter, and not contempt, is the object of the present inquiry.

200. Laughter may be occasioned by tickling, or in children by gladness. But I speak of that laughter, which is the outward expression of a certain agreeable emotion raised in the mind by the view, or by the conception, of something which we call oddity, drollery, or by some such name. This feeling may be in the mind, when laughter, the outward sign, does not appear; for one may restrain laughter, when one is much tempted to indulge it. In like manner, tears are an outward sign of sorrow, but one may be very sorrowful who does not weep. What, then, is this drollery, or oddity? What is that quality or character, which all ludicrous or laughable objects have in common?

201. First: The object of ridicule in comedy is very well defined by Aristotle; who calls it, Some small fault or turpitude, not attended with pain, and not destructive.

tive. For to laugh at distress, or at great faults, is at once unnatural and wicked; and therefore a writer of comedy is highly blameable, when he introduces misfortunes or crimes on the stage, in order to make us laugh at them. But Aristotle's definition does not hold true of laughter in general, or even of all innocent laughter. For men may laugh innocently at that in which they perceive no turpitude. Fine turns of wit and humour may be ludicrous, even when they suggest to the mind nothing which it is possible either to despise or to disapprove.

202. Secondly: Mr Hobbes is of opinion, and he is rashly followed by the author of the forty-seventh paper of *the Spectator*, that laughter is a sudden exultation of mind, arising from the conception of pre-eminence in ourselves, and of inferiority in that which we compare with ourselves as we are at present. This resolves laughter into pride. But nothing is more absurd. Proud men are more remarkable for gravity than for laughter; and laughter is seldom taken for a sign of pride.
And

And men laugh at things which they do not compare with themselves at all ; and at the wit and humour of authors, whom they believe to be their superiors in every respect.

203. Thirdly : Hutcheson says, that a mixture of dignity and meanness, appearing in the same object, or suggested to the mind by one and the same appearance, is the cause of laughter. And indeed it often is, but not always. For such a mixture appears in the people, and in the houses, of every large town ; and yet a large town, or a great multitude, is rather a sublime than a ludicrous object. And laughter may be raised by some sorts of wit and humour, in which it is impossible to discern any mixture of dignity and meanness. And a mimic may make us laugh, by imitating the manner of a person who has no more dignity than the mimic himself has. — These theories, therefore, are either false, or not sufficiently comprehensive.

204. If a painter, says Horace, were to join to the head of a man the neck of a horse, feathers of different birds, limbs of

X

different

different animals, and the tail of a fish, the whole would be ludicrous. This, it seems, was true in Horace's time, and no doubt is so still. It would appear then, that a ludicrous object must be made up of several parts; that the parts whereof it is made up must be in some degree inconsistent, unsuitable, or incongruous; and that they must be considered as united in one assemblage, or as acquiring a sort of mutual connection from the peculiar manner in which the mind takes notice of them. And therefore it may be inferred, that laughter is occasioned by an incongruity or unsuitableness of the parts that compose, or seem to compose, any complex object or idea. Incongruous objects may in several ways be united so as to make the union ludicrous.

205. First: When they happen to be *placed together*. Erasmus, in a dialogue called *Absurda*, endeavours to provoke mirth by a conference between two persons, who speak alternately, each pursuing a subject of his own, without any regard to what is said by the other. It looks like a dialogue
between

between two deaf men : and the humour, such as it is, if there be any, arises merely from the juxtaposition of sentences, which have no other relation but that of place. When Pope says of Prince Eugene, that " he is a great taker of snuff as well as of towns," the two things spoken of, which are utterly incongruous, acquire an unexpected relation by being placed together; and made equally dependent on the word *taker*; which of course becomes a *pun*, by being used at one and the same time in two different senses. And it is this mixture, of incongruity and seeming relation, that makes the passage ludicrous.

206. Secondly : When things appearing in the relation of *cause and effect* are very incongruous and inadequate to each other, they sometimes provoke a smile ; as when a man is thrown into a violent passion by a trifling cause ; as if we were to see a person seriously attempt (like the child in Quarles's emblems) to blow out the sun with a pair of bellows, or four men take hold of the four corners of a church with an intention to lift it from the ground.

X 2

207. Third-

207. Thirdly: The unexpected discovery of *resemblance* between things supposed to be unlike, when it is clearly expressed in few words, constitutes what is commonly called *wit*; and is a very copious source of pleasantry. Such, to give one instance, is that comparison in Hudibras, of the dawn of the morning to a boiled lobster; "Like a lobster boil'd the morn From black to red began to turn." At first, there seems to be no resemblance at all: but, when we recollect, that the lobster's colour is by boiling changed from dark to red, we recognise a likeness to that change of colour in the sky which happens at day-break.

208. Fourthly: *Dignity and meanness* unexpectedly united, or supposed to be united, in the same assemblage, is a frequent cause of laughter. As when a mean sentiment unexpectedly appears in a solemn discourse, or a serious sentiment in a trifling one:—as when the phraseology of a solemn passage in a well-known author is, by a little change of words, made to express, in the way of Parody, something
frivolous

frivolous or very different :—as when mean ideas and images are expressed in pompous language, as in the *Dunciad* and *Splendid Shilling* :—as when important ideas are debased by mean words or provincial barbarisms, whereof we have had some examples already. (See § 174.) But observe, that mixtures of this sort, when they seem to proceed from want of taste, or from any mental depravity, are more apt to move indignation than laughter.

209. In ludicrous writing two sorts of style are used, and both imply a mixture of dignity and meanness ; namely, the Mock-heroick and the Burlesque. The former considers little things as great, and describes them with pomp of language and of harmony. The *Dunciad*, the *Splendid Shilling*, the *Battle of the frogs and mice* commonly though erroneously ascribed to Homer, are masterpieces in this way of writing ; as are also the *Lutrin* of Boileau, and Pope's *Rape of the Lock*. The Burlesque author assumes the character of a buffoon, and considers great things as little, and little things as less than the reality ;
and

and affects vulgar language, and, if he write in verse, a peculiar levity in the construction of his numbers. *Hudibras*, and the *History of John Bull*, are in the burlesque style, the one verse the other prose; and both excellent in their kind.

210. Some works of humour are written in a grave style, without either meanness or elevation of language. Many of the humorous papers in the *Tatler* and *Spectator*, and many passages in *Gulliver's Travels*, are of this sort. The author takes the character of a plain man delivering a simple and serious narrative of a matter which he seems to think important and true; and this, if the subject be trifling, or the narrative palpably fabulous, has the same pleasing effect, as when a person tells a merry story with an unaffected gravity of countenance. See particularly the Journal of the Court of Honour in the *Tatler*.

211. Incongruity is not always ludicrous. It ceases to be so, when it comes to be customary and common; and therefore ludicrous incongruity must have in it something uncommon, or at least unexpected.

pected. New fashions of dress often seem at their first appearance ridiculous; but, when generally adopted, are ridiculous no longer. Besides, the inward emotion that prompts to laughter is not very powerful; many other emotions have naturally more strength, and have therefore a natural right to suppress it. Consequently, those incongruous associations, that give rise to pity, disgust, fear, anger, hatred, or moral disapprobation, are not laughable, because they call forth passions of greater power, and more importance. In these cases the weaker emotion gives place to the stronger.

212. And every one is sensible that it ought to be so. Were a man to laugh at distress, or at any thing which his conscience tells him is criminal, he would be severely censured; for it would be said, with respect to the first, that he ought to pity, and not to laugh; and, with respect to the second, that superior considerations ought to have restrained his laughter, for that they are fools who laugh at sin. And most people must have observed, that we
are

are not apt to laugh at that which disgusts us, or makes us very angry, or seriously afraid. Had the writers of comedy paid a proper regard to these things, and never attempted to call forth either immoral or unnatural laughter, the Comic Muse would, in respect both of utility and of elegance, have been more worthy of honour, than I am afraid she can be said to be in any nation.

213. Laughter, notwithstanding what Lord Chesterfield has said against it, is perfectly consistent with elegant manners; as might be proved from the practice of some of the most distinguished characters both of these and of former times. Good-breeding, however, lays some restraints upon it, which may be thus explained. Good-breeding is the art, or rather the habit, of pleasing those with whom we converse. Now we cannot please others, if we either show them what is unpleasing in ourselves, or give them reason to think that we perceive unpleasing qualities in them. All emotions, therefore, which may betray our own bad qualities, or might naturally arise from

from the view of bad qualities in others ; and all those emotions or passions in general, which our company may think too violent, and cannot sympathise with or partake in, good-breeding requires that we suppress. Laughter that is too loud, or too frequent, is an emotion of this kind. And therefore, a well-bred man will be careful not to laugh louder or longer than others ; nor to laugh at all, when he has reason to think, that the jest will not be equally relished by the company.

214. This rule, a little extended, may be of great use, for the regulation of all those emotions that display themselves in the outward behaviour. Truth we should never violate, nor offer any outrage to virtue or decency. But, within the bounds of innocence, it is both our duty and our interest, to make ourselves agreeable to those with whom we associate, especially to the wise and good. This however we shall not be able to do, unless we take pains to regulate all our passions, and bring them down to that level, on which they will be agreeable to the more intelligent part of
Y mankind.

mankind. The suppression of evil passions, even for a short time, weakens their force, and will at last, if persisted in, give us the victory over them. And hence, in regular society, where the rules of good-breeding are observed, and where inordinate passions are not suffered to appear outwardly in the behaviour, we live together on a more agreeable footing, and in a way more favourable to virtuous improvement, than in any of those states of society, in which men are at no pains to conceal or govern their passions. The savage is impetuous, and a slave to sudden and violent passion; in the man of breeding we expect coolness, moderation, and self-command.

215. The emotions connected with risibility are a source of much amusement to persons of every age and condition. Wit and humour, when innocent, as they always may be and ought to be, enliven conversation, and endear human creatures to one another; and, when discreetly applied, may be of singular advantage in discountenancing vice and folly.

S E C T.

S E C T. X.

Of Sympathy.

216. **T**HERE is in our nature a tendency to participate in the pains and pleasures of others ; so that their good is in some degree our good, and their evil our evil : the natural effect of which is, to unite men more closely to one another, by prompting them, even for their own sake, to relieve distress and promote happiness. This participation of the joys and sorrows of others may be termed Sympathy or Fellow-feeling. Sympathy with distress is called Compassion or Pity. Sympathy with the happiness of another has no particular name ; but, when expressed in words to the happy person, is termed Congratulation. Every good man knows, that it is natural for him to rejoice with them who rejoice, and to weep with those that weep.

217. Even for some inanimate things we

Y 2

have

have a sort of tenderness, which by a licentious figure of speech might be called sympathy. To lose a staff which we have long walked with, or see in ruins a house where we had long lived happily, would give a slight concern, though the loss to us were a trifle, or nothing at all. We feel something like pity for the dead bodies of our friends, arising from the consideration of their being laid in the solitary grave, a prey to worms and reptiles; and yet we are sure that from that circumstance the dead can never suffer any thing. Towards the brute creation, who have feeling as well as we, though not in the same degree or kind, our sympathy is more rational, and indeed ought to be strong: "A righteous man regardeth the life," and is not insensible to the happiness, "of his beast."

218. But our sympathy operates most powerfully towards our fellow-men; and, other circumstances being equal, is for the most part more or less powerful, according as they are more nearly, or more remotely, connected with us by kindred, by friendship, or by condition. With a friend, with

a

a relation, or with a person of our own condition, we are more apt to sympathise, than with people of different circumstances or connections. If we were to be tried for our life, we should wish to have a jury of our equals. He who has had the toothach or the gout, is more inclined to pity those who suffer from the same distempers, than that person is who never felt them.

219. We sometimes sympathise with another person in a case in which that person has little feeling of either good or evil. We blush at the rudeness of another man in company, even when he himself does not know that he is rude. We tremble for a mason standing on a high scaffold, though we have reason to believe he is in no danger, because custom has made it familiar to him. On these occasions, our fellow-feeling seems to arise, not from our opinion of what the other person suffers, but from our idea of what we ourselves should suffer if we were in his situation, with the same habits and powers of reflection which we have at present.

220. Our fellow-feeling is never thoroughly

roughly roused, till we know something of the nature and cause of that happiness or misery which is the occasion of it: for till this be known, we cannot so easily imagine ourselves in the condition of the happy or unhappy person. When we meet with one in distress, where the cause is not apparent, we are uneasy indeed, but the pain is not so great, or at least not so definite, as it comes to be when he has answered this question, What is the matter with you? which is always the first question we ask on such occasions. And then our sympathy is in proportion to what we think he feels, or perhaps to what we may think it reasonable that he should feel.

221. Many of our passions may be communicated or strengthened by sympathy. In a chearful company we become chearful, and melancholy in a sad one. The presence of a multitude employed in devotion tends to make us devout; the timorous have acted valiantly in the society of the valiant; and the cowardice of a few has struck a panic into an army. In a historical or fabulous narrative, we sympathise

this with our favourite personages in those emotions of gratitude, joy, indignation, or sorrow, which we suppose would naturally arise in them from the circumstances of their fortune. Passions, however, that are unnatural, as envy, jealousy, avarice, malice, or unreasonably violent, as rage and revenge, we are not apt to sympathize with; we rather take part with the persons who may seem to be in danger from them, because we can more easily suppose ourselves in their condition.

222. Nor do we readily sympathize with passions which we disapprove, or have not experienced. It is therefore a matter of prudence in poets, and other writers of fiction, to contrive such characters and incidents, as the greater part of their readers may be supposed to sympathize with, and be interested in. And it is their duty, to cherish, by means of sympathy, in those who read them, those affections only which invigorate the mind, and are favourable to virtue; as patriotism, valour, benevolence, piety, and the conjugal, parental, and filial charities. Scenes of exquisite distress, too
long

long continued, enervate and overwhelm the soul: and those representations are still more blameable, and cannot be too much blamed, which kindle licentious passion, or promote indolence, affectation, or sensuality. Of the multitudes of novels now published, it is astonishing and most provoking to consider, how few are not chargeable with one or other of these faults, or with them all in conjunction. But immoral or extravagant novels would not be brought to market, nor of course written, if from the buyers of such things there were not a *demand* for extravagance and immorality.

223. Let us cherish sympathy. By attention and exercise it may be improved in every man. It prepares the mind for receiving the impressions of virtue; and without it there can be no true politeness. Nothing is more odious, than that insensibility, which wraps a man up in himself and his own concerns, and prevents his being moved with either the joys or the sorrows of another. This inhuman temper, however common, seems not to be natural to the soul

soul of man, but to derive its origin from evil habits of levity, selfishness, or pride; and will therefore be easily avoided by those who cultivate the opposite habits of generosity, humility, and good-nature. Of these amiable affections, the forms of common civility, and the language of polite conversation, are remarkably expressive; a proof, that good-breeding is founded in virtue and good sense, and that a kind and honest heart is the first requisite to an engaging deportment.

224. The essential parts of good-breeding are, to speak little and modestly of one's self, candidly of the absent, and affectionately to those who are present; to show, by our looks and behaviour, that we respect our company, and that their happiness or convenience is the chief thing we have in view; to sympathise readily and tenderly in their joys and sorrows; not to obtrude ourselves upon the conversation, or seek to draw general notice; and, in all ordinary cases, when we differ in opinion from others, to do it with that respect for them, and that diffidence in our-

Z

selves,

selves, which become a fallible creature who wishes to be better informed. Such behaviour cannot be permanent or graceful, where it is hypocritical; and therefore they are greatly mistaken, who think, with Lord Chesterfield, that good-breeding consists in disguise, or that the malicious or the arrogant are at all susceptible of that accomplishment.

225. There are men, neither arrogant nor malicious, who sometimes, without bad intention, give offence, by saying or doing that which, if they had entered more readily into the views and circumstances of the company, their own good-nature would have determined them to avoid: while others apprehend so quickly the situation and sentiments of every one present, that they give no offence to any, but great satisfaction to all. Habitual inadvertence, or perhaps a disposition to be more attentive to one's self than to one's company, may have produced the unpoliteness of the former class of men; which will probably be found to arise from one's not having been accustomed, in the early part of life, to the
the

the society of well-bred people. They, on the other hand, who have been much in the world, and have found it necessary, from the first, to accommodate themselves by obliging deportment to persons of various characters, acquire a great facility of conceiving what modes of conversation and behaviour will be most agreeable to those with whom they may happen to be associated. And thus it appears, that the sensibilities, here comprehended under the general name of Sympathy, may by education and habit be greatly improved; or greatly weakened, if not destroyed, by inattention and want of practice.

226. There is a third class of men that one has sometimes the misfortune to meet with, who affect what they call a bluntness of manners, and value themselves on speaking their mind on all occasions whether people take it well or ill. Now it is right that people should speak their minds; but the mind that is fit *to be spoken* (if I may express myself so strangely) ought to be free from pride, ostentation, and ill-nature; for from these hateful passions the

bluntness here alluded to may generally be derived. Such people may have a sort of negative honesty; but of delicacy they are destitute. In their company one sweats with the apprehension of their committing some gross indecorum; for no body knows what limits an indelicate mind may choose to prescribe to itself. From injury punishable by law they may abstain, but they often give such offence as amounts not to injury only, but to cruelty. The thief that picks our pocket does not so much harm in society, nor occasion so much pain, as they may be charged with who shock the ear of piety with profaneness, or tear open the wounds of the bleeding heart by forcing upon it some painful recollection.

227. Sympathy with distress is thought so essential to human nature, that the want of it has been called *inhumanity*. Want of sympathy with another's happiness is not stigmatised by so hard a name; but it is impossible to esteem the man who takes no delight in the 'good of a fellow-creature; we call him hard-hearted, selfish, unnatural; epithets expressive of high disapprobation.

tion. Habits of reflection, with some experience of misfortune, do greatly promote the amiable sensibility of which we now speak. *Non ignara mali miseris succurrere disco*, says Dido in Virgil. Inconsiderate men are seldom tender-hearted, and mere want of reflection leads children into acts of cruelty.

S E C T. XI.

Of Taste.

228. **T**HAT faculty, or those faculties, which fit us for receiving pleasure from what is beautiful, elegant, or excellent, in the works of nature and art, has in modern times been called *Taste*. He who derives no pleasure from such elegance, excellence, or beauty, is said to be a man of *no taste* : he who is gratified with that which is faulty in works of art, is a man of *bad taste* : and he who is pleased, or displeased, according to the degree

gree of excellence or faultiness, is a man of *good taste*. This way of expressing critical sagacity by an allusion to the sensations received by the tongue and palate, though it be now found in most of the languages of Europe, is of no great antiquity. Petronius indeed uses *Sapor* in this sense: from which, as well as from many other circumstances, I suspect, that the trifling book which bears that name is partly modern.

229. Good taste implies several talents or faculties. The first is a *lively imagination*. This qualifies a man for readily apprehending the meaning of an author or artist, tracing out the connection of his thoughts, and forming the same views of things which he had formed. Without this talent, it is impossible to form a right judgement of an author's work. Delicacy of connection, and such contrivances in a fable or story as tend to produce surprise, are among the chief beauties of poetry; but these a man of dull imagination is apt to overlook, or not to understand.—This liveliness of fancy must be corrected and regulated by the knowledge

knowledge of nature both external and internal, that is, both of the visible universe, and of the human mind. For he who is unacquainted with nature can never be a man of taste; because he cannot know whether the productions of art resemble nature or not: and, if he know not this, he cannot receive from the imitative arts any real satisfaction.

230. The second thing necessary to good taste is, *a clear and distinct apprehension of things*. Some men think accurately on all subjects: the thoughts of other men are almost always indefinite and obscure. The former easily make you comprehend their meaning: the latter can never speak intelligibly except upon familiar topics. He who is master of his subject, says Horace, will not be at a loss either for expression or for method: whence we may learn, that accurate knowledge is the best, and indeed the only solid, foundation of true eloquence. Lord Chesterfield seems to think otherwise; but the eloquence he recommends is, like his favourite system of manners, not solid, but showy and superficial. — It is plain, that

that they who are accustomed to think with precision must be the only competent judges of what they study, because they alone can thoroughly understand it. Habits of accuracy and method will gradually improve the mind in this respect : and indeed study is good for little when it is not methodical and accurate.

231. The third thing necessary to good taste, is a quick perception of, or a capacity of being easily and pleasurably affected with, those objects that gratify the secondary senses, particularly sublimity, beauty, harmony, and imitation. In this respect different minds are differently constituted. Many have little or no taste for harmony either in language or in musical sound. Some have great talents in wit and humour, with hardly any relish for the sublime and beautiful : Swift is an instance. Others, like Milton, have an exquisite invention in regard to sublimity and beauty of description, and harmony of language, without any talents for wit or delicate humour. And some have excelled both in sublimity and in wit ; as Shakespeare did in a high degree,

degree, and Pope in a very considerable degree. Homer, too, is said by Aristotle to have excelled in ludicrous as well as sublime composition, and to have written a comic poem, called *Margites*, which is lost. —The only way of improving the Secondary senses, is by studying nature and the best performances in art; by cultivating habits of virtue; and by keeping at a distance from every thing gross and indelicate, in books and conversation, in manners and in language.

232. The fourth thing necessary to good taste, is that *Sympathy* or Sensibility above described; by which, supposing ourselves in the condition of other men, we readily adopt their sentiments and feelings, and make them as it were our own; and so receive from them some degree of that pain or pleasure which they would bring along with them if they were really our own. Without this moral sensibility, our minds would not be open to receive those emotions of pity, joy, admiration, sorrow, and imaginary terror, which the best performances in the fine arts, particularly in

A 2

poetry,

poetry, are intended to raise within us; nor, by consequence, could we form a right estimate of the abilities of the author, or of the tendency and importance of his work.

233. The last thing requisite to form good taste is *Judgement*, or *Good Sense*; which is indeed the principal thing, and may without much impropriety be said to comprehend all the rest. Without this, we could not compare the imitations of nature with nature itself, so as to perceive how far they agree or differ; nor could we judge of the probability of events in a fable, or of the truth of sentiments; nor whether the plan of a work be according to rule, or otherwise. For in every art certain rules are established; some resulting from the very nature of the thing, and the end proposed by the artist, and these are essential and indispensable rules; and others that may be called mechanical or ornamental, which depend rather upon custom, than upon nature, and claim no higher origin, than the practice of some great performer, whom

whom it has become the fashion to imitate.

234. The violation of an essential rule discovers want of sense in an author, and consequently want of taste; for where good sense is not, taste cannot be. To depart from a mechanical rule, may be consistent with the soundest judgement, and is sometimes a proof both of good taste, and of great genius.—Take an example or two:—To divide a tragedy or comedy into five acts; and rigidly to observe, in dramatic fable, the unities (as they are called) of time and place, are rules, which, though many poets have observed, and many critics enjoined them, are not essential. But, to make poetical persons speak and act suitably to their characters; to adhere, in history and philosophy, to truth, and in poetry to probability; and to give to every work, whether prose or verse, a moral tendency, with simplicity of contrivance and of style, and unity of design,—are essential rules, which no writer is at liberty to violate.

235. All men, and even children, have

A a 2

something

Something of taste, as appears from the pleasure they take in songs, tales, wit and humour, pictures, and other imitations. But education and study are necessary to the improvement of taste; and it may be improved by various methods, some of which have been mentioned already. Whatever tends to enlarge, correct, or methodise, our knowledge, either of men or of things, is to be considered as a means of improving judgement, and consequently taste. History and geometry, and those parts of philosophy which convey clear ideas, and are attended with satisfactory evidence, are peculiarly useful in this respect; to which must be added such an acquaintance with life and manners, as fits a man for business and conversation.

236. Taste is further improved, as already hinted; by studying nature, and the best performances in art. Among these are to be reckoned the Greek and Latin classics; the most valuable of which are Homer, Xenophon, Demosthenes, Thucydides, Sophocles, Plutarch's Lives; Terence, Cæsar, Cicero, Sallust, Virgil, Horace,

race, and Livy. He who has read these few authors with due attention, may be truly said to be a man of learning, and can hardly fail to be a man of taste. I need not add, that bad books, and bad company, not only deprave the taste, but also pervert the understanding, and poison the heart; and that the practice of reading even good books superficially, breeds a habit of inattention alike unfriendly to intellectual and to moral improvement.—It was formerly said, that we should read none but approved authors, and never leave a good one till we understand every point of his doctrine and every word of his language. To prepare us for study so rigidly accurate, an exact, and even a minute, knowledge of grammar is necessary: indeed it is not easy to say, to what degree, and in how many different ways, both memory and judgement may be improved by an intimate acquaintance with grammar; which is therefore, with good reason, made the first and fundamental part of literary education. The greatest orators, the most elegant scholars, and the most accomplished

ished men of business, that have appeared in the world, of whom I need only mention Cesar and Cicero, were not only studious of grammar, but most learned grammarians; and Horace and Virgil, and most of the great authors above mentioned, appear, from the wonderful correctness of their style, to have been the same.

237. Taste is also improved by reading the best books of criticism; particularly, the critical works of Horace, Quintilian, Longinus, Dionysius of Halicarnassus, and the Poetics and Rhetoric of Aristotle. In Pope's notes on his Translation of Homer; in Dryden's Prefaces; in Addison's papers on Paradise Lost in the fourth and fifth volumes of the Spectator; in Hurd's commentary on Horace's Art of Poetry and Epistle to Augustus; in Pope's and Johnson's Prefaces to Shakespear, and in Mrs Montagu's Essay on his writings and genius; in Rollin's method of studying and teaching the Belles Lettres, and in the Abbe Du' Bos's Reflections on Poetry and Painting; you will find a great deal of good criticism perspicuously and elegantly expressed.

expressed.—My last remark on this subject is, that taste is greatly improved by cultivating all the generous, benevolent, and pious affections, and repressing pride, malice, envy, and every other selfish and wicked passion. Virtue is the perfection of beauty; and the love of virtue might have been, and perhaps ought to have been, mentioned as essential to true taste.

238. It cannot be denied, that some unskilful writers have obtained considerable reputation, and that inelegant modes of writing have frequently been fashionable. There have been men, who could prefer Pliny to Cicero, Lucan to Virgil, Waller to Spenser, and Cowley and Blackmore to Milton. But from this we must not infer, as some have done, that Taste is a variable thing. Its principles are real and permanent, though men may occasionally be ignorant of them. Very different systems of philosophy have appeared; yet nature and truth are always the same. Fashions in dress and furniture are perpetually changing; and yet, in both, that is often allowed to be elegant which is not fashionable;

able: which could not be, if there were not, in both, certain principles of elegance, which derive their charm, neither from caprice, nor from custom, but from the very nature of the thing.

239. In the fine arts, the standard of excellence may be presumed to be still more permanent. There are now extant, statues, carvings, and remains of antient buildings, which were the admiration of antiquity, and are as much admired now as ever. And there are authors, Homer and Virgil for example, whom, for these two thousand years, all who understood them have considered as the greatest of poets. When an author, or when a work of art, has been long in possession of the public esteem, and has been admired by the most candid and enlightened minds, it must be taken as a proof of extraordinary merit; and the dissatisfaction of a few cavillers may not unreasonably be imputed to ignorance or affectation.

240. To be pleased with novelty and imitation, to prefer good pictures to bad, harmony to harshness, and regular shape
to

to distortion; to be gratified with accurate representations of human manners; to be interested in a detail of human adventures, and more or less according to the degree of probability: to look with delight on the sun, moon, and stars; the expanse of heaven; grand and regular buildings; human features expressive of health, sagacity, cheerfulness, and good nature; colours, and shapes, and sizes, of plants and animals, that betoken perfection and usefulness; the scenery of groves and rivers, of mountains and the ocean; the verdure of spring, the flowers of summer, and even the pure splendor of winter snow;—is surely natural to every rational being, who has leisure to attend to such things, and is in any degree enlightened by contemplation.

241. If this be denied, I would ask, whence it comes, that the poetry of all nations, which was certainly intended to give pleasure to those for whom it was made, should abound in descriptions of these and the like objects; and why the fine arts should have been a matter of general attention in all civilised countries. And if

B b

this

this is not denied, a standard of taste is acknowledged; and it must be admitted further, that, whatever temporary infatuations may take place in the world of letters, simplicity and nature sooner or later gain the ascendant, and prove their rectitude by their permanency. *Opinionum commenta delat dies; natura judiciz confirmat.*

C H A P. II.

OF MAN'S ACTIVE POWERS.

S E C T. I.

Of Free Agency.

242. **A**CTION implies motion; but there may be motion, as in a clock, where, *properly speaking*, there is no agent. Many motions necessary to life are continually

usually going on in the human body; as those of the heart, lungs, and arteries; but these are not human actions, because man is not the cause of them. For the same reason, breathing, and the motion of the eye-lids, are not actions; because, though we may ~~stop~~ *stop* for a little time in suspending them, for the purpose of seeing or hearing more accurately, they commonly go on without any care of ours; and, while they do so, we are, in regard to them, not active, but passive.

243. In like manner, the casual train of thought, which passes through the mind in a reverie (see § 140.) is not action; but when we interrupt it, in order to fix our view upon a particular object, that interruption, and the attention consequent upon it, are mental actions. Recollection is another, and investigation a third; but a remembrance occurring to us, without any exertion on our part, is not action, and our minds in receiving it, or becoming conscious of it, are as really passive, as the eye is in receiving the images of those visible things that pass before it when it is

112

B b 2

open.

open. Nor is the mere perception of truth or falsehood a mental action, any more than the mere perception of hardness in the stone, which we feel, we must feel while it presses upon us; and the proposition, which our judgement declares to be true, we must, while we attend to it and its evidence, perceive to be true. But to exert our reason in endeavouring to find out the truth, or to be wilfully inattentive to evidence, are actions of the mind; the one laudable, and becoming our rational nature, the other, as unmanly and immoral.

244. All action is the work of an agent, that is, of a being who acts; and every being who acts is the beginner of that motion which constitutes the action. The bullet that kills a man, the explosion that makes it fly, the sparkles from the flint which produce the explosion, and the collision of the flint and steel whereby the sparkles are struck out, are none of them agents, all being passive and equally so; nor is it the finger operating upon the trigger that begins the motion, for that is in like manner a passive instrument: it is the mind,

mind, giving to the finger direction and energy, which is the first mover in this business, and therefore is, properly speaking, the agent. And if we were to be supernaturally informed, that the mind thus exerted was made to do so by the secret but irresistible impulse of a superior being, we should instantly declare that being the agent, and the mind as really a passive instrument, as the finger or the gunpowder.

245. To ask therefore, and the question is almost as old as philosophy itself, whether man in any of his actions be a free agent, seems to be the same thing as to ask, whether or not man be capable of action. To every action, using the word in its proper sense, it is essential *to be free: necessary agency* (unless we take the word in a figurative sense, as when we say, the agency of the pendulum regulates the clock) is as real a contradiction in terms as *free slave*. If every motion in our mind and body is necessary, then we never move ourselves; and those motions, which are commonly called human actions, are not the actions of men, but of something else, which,

which, according to the language of this theory, we must term *necessity*. To be an active being, is to have a power of beginning motion; to act, or to be an agent, is to exert that power. Brutes have a power of beginning motion; which, being in them not accompanied with any sense of right and wrong, has been called *Spontaneity*; to distinguish it from that power which rational beings possess of beginning motion, and which, being accompanied with a consciousness of moral good and evil, is denominated *Liberty*.

246. Mental actions were mentioned; and then the mind performs without any dependance, that we can explain, on any bodily part. Bodily exertions do not take their rise in the mind, which has the power of beginning motion in the body, as well as in itself. But the human body, like every other piece of matter, possesses not in itself the power of beginning motion; and therefore bodily motions proceeding from the mind are not properly *actions* of the body; because, in regard to them, the body is only the passive instrument of the soul.

soul.—The power of beginning motion, exerted of choice by a rational and intelligent being, may be called *Volition* or *Will*. It is in man the immediate cause of action. We *will* to exert ourselves in recollection or attention; and at the same instant the act of recollecting or attending is begun: we *will* to move our arm, or leg, or any particular finger, and instantly it is moved; and we feel, that this energy of mind, which we call *will*, is the cause of the motion. But in what way, or by what means, the mind operates upon itself so as to produce attention or recollection, or upon the muscles that move the several parts of our body so as to give motion to those muscles, we can neither explain nor conceive.

247. Some things we can, and others we cannot do: we can walk, but we cannot fly. Those things it is in our power to do, which depend upon our will; and from them proceeds whatever may be called moral or immoral, virtuous or vicious, praiseworthy or blameable, in our conduct. For no man is seriously blamed or praised for that in the performance of which he is not

not considered as a free agent ; that is, as one who had it in his power either to do or not to do. This, according to the sense of the words *agent* and *action*, as already explained, is saying nothing more, than that no man is seriously blamed or praised, except for actions done by himself, and not by another.

248. Our mind and body are put in motion by the will ; and philosophers have said, that the will is determined by motives, purposes, intentions, or reasons. Granting this to be true, I cannot admit, that by such motives or purposes the will is *necessarily* determined. It is the will itself, or the self-determining power of the mind, that gives a motive that weight and influence whereby the will is determined : in other words, it depends on ourselves, whether we are to act from one motive or from another. A man, for example, is tempted to steal. His motive to commit the crime is the love of money ; his motive to abstain is a regard to duty. If he suffer himself to be determined by the former motive, he is a thief, and deserves punishment ; if he comply

comply with the latter, he has done well. Now all the world knows and believes, and the laws of every country suppose, that he had it in his power to act according to the impulse of either the one motive or the other; that is, that he had it in his power to give to either of them that influence which would determine his conduct.

249. To set this matter in another light. Action implies motion; and where there is not a power to begin motion, there cannot be action, there must always be rest. Now, though motion, when begun, may be communicated from one body to another, nothing, so far as we know, can begin motion, but mind. If therefore motives or purposes have in themselves a power to determine necessarily the mind to act, they must also in themselves possess the power of beginning or communicating motion; that is, they must be, either minds or bodies. But a motive, such as the love of money, or a sense of duty, is neither a mind, nor a body, and therefore cannot begin motion, nor consequently be of it-
 C c self

self the immediate and necessary cause of action.

250. A motive may indeed raise within us a certain desire or aversion, or may itself be that desire or aversion when raised: but desire and aversion are so far from being understood to be actions, that in all the languages we know they are called by a name corresponding to the English word *passions*, and signifying, not acting, but suffering, or being acted upon. We may indeed act according to the impulse of aversion or desire; but still it is *we* that act; and it depends upon our will, upon our power of self-determination, whether we are to act according to that impulse, or not. A hungry man has a great desire to eat; but within his reach there may be victuals, which, though he knows to be good, he may refrain from eating; though at the same time he is conscious it is in his power to eat, notwithstanding any motive, a regard to health for example, that may urge him to abstain. Every man has an aversion to pain and death; but whether a foldier shall flee from both, or bravely in his

his country's cause set both at defiance, depends entirely upon himself;—as long at least as he retains the use of reason, and the power of managing his limbs; that is, as long as he is an accountable being.

251. There are writers, who maintain, that the human frame is wholly corporeal, and that there is no good reason for distinguishing between the soul and the body of man. This doctrine has been called Materialism. If I could acquiesce in it, I should perhaps grant, that all human actions are necessary; because, being produced by one bodily part operating upon another, they must as really be the effects of mechanism, as the motions of a clock. But if this be true; and if motives, that is, thoughts and abstract ideas, have the power of producing human action; those motives or ideas must have the power of putting that great machine, the human body, or part of it at least, in motion, and must therefore themselves be either bodies, which is inconceivable and impossible, or spirit, which the materialist denies to be in human nature. Here is a difficulty, which

it seems impossible to get over, without renouncing both materialism and necessity; that is, without admitting, that there is in man something which is not matter, and which has the power of beginning motion both in itself, and in the human body.

252. I do not here mean to enter minutely into the question concerning liberty and necessity: first, because I have explained myself at some length on that subject in another place; secondly, because to give even a summary of all that has been written about it would take up too much time; and thirdly, because in these moral inquiries I think it my duty to avoid controversy and unprofitable speculation, and confine myself to plain, practical, and useful truth. I therefore only add a few miscellaneous remarks. The first is, that the freedom of the human will is a matter of fact and experience, whereof the human mind is conscious, and which the language and behaviour of mankind in all ages prove that they did, and do, and must acknowledge. In all cases of conduct, in which I consider myself as an accountable being, I
feel

feel that I have it in my power to do or not to do, to speak or be silent, to speak truth or falsehood, to do my duty or neglect it. And were I to speak and act as if such things did not seem to me to be in my power, the world would charge me with affectation or insanity.

253. Even those few speculative men, and they are but few, who in words deny the freedom of the will, do yet in the ordinary affairs of life speak and act like other people; making promises, giving advice, laying down rules and precepts, blaming certain actions as what ought not to have been done, and praising others as right and what ought to be done: the propriety of which conduct it is not easy to reconcile, in a satisfactory manner, to the tenets of those who teach, as the advocates for necessity do, that no past action of our lives could have been different from what it is, and that no future action can be contingent, or such as it is in our power to do or not to do. The condition of these theorists is similar to that of those who argue against the existence of matter. Both affirm

firm what contradicts the opinion and experience, not of the vulgar only, but of the most acute philosophers, and of mankind in general: both say, they believe that, which is inconsistent with what common sense taught them to believe, and with what they would still have believed, if they had *kept to their natural sense of things*, and not perplexed themselves with metaphysical arguments: and both assert to be true what they cannot reduce to practice, and what is not warranted by Christianity, or by the morality and politics of any enlightened nation.

254. With respect to the Christian religion, as concerned in this matter;—it may be observed, that one strenuous fatalist urges the doctrine of necessity, as an argument, either in favour of atheism, or against the turpitude of vice; and that another zealous necessarian, who avows his belief both in God and in Christ, seems to admit, that the testimony of the sacred writers is rather against necessity than for it. Judging, then, either from the affirmation of the one, or from the concession of the other, we must infer, that the Christian religion

and the doctrine of necessity are not friendly to each other ; which is indeed what the asserters of liberty have generally maintained. If necessity lead to atheism, or if it confound the distinctions of vice and virtue, (and I not only agree with Mr Hume, that it does either the one or the other, but am satisfied that it does both), it is surely subversive of all religion. And if the sacred writers seem to declare in favour of liberty, (which I agree with Dr Priestley that they do) ; and if it is from them, and from them only, that I learn what Christianity is ; I must either question their infallibility as teachers, or I must with them declare in favour of liberty. But, though the belief of necessity would, if I were capable of it, be fatal to *my* religious and moral principles, I am far from thinking, that it must have the same effect on every other person : different minds may no doubt conceive of it differently. Yet it is remarkable, that some of its most distinguished advocates, of whom I shall only mention Spinoza, Hobbes, Collins, Hume, and Voltaire, were enemies to our faith ;

faith; whereas of the modern defenders of liberty I do not recollect one who was not a Christian. The opinion of necessity, says Bishop Butler, seems to be the very basis upon which infidelity grounds itself.

255. We are permitted, and commanded to pray: we consider it as a high privilege, and most reasonable service: we feel that it produces good effects on the mind; and our religion promises particular blessings to those who piously perform it. But if every change in our minds to the better or to the worse, if all the blessings we can receive, and if our praying, or not praying, are all things necessary, and the unalterable result of a long series of causes, that began to operate before we were born, and still continue to operate independently on us, why is prayer, or indeed any thing else, enjoined as a duty? and how are we to blame for neglecting, or how can we be rewarded for doing, that which it is not possible for *us* either to do or to neglect? In like manner, if no past action of our lives could have been different from what it is, why do we blame ourselves for any
action

action of our past life? we may as reasonably blame ourselves for not having learned to fly, or for not coming into the world before the present century. And yet, if we do not blame any part of our past conduct, we cannot repent of it; and if we do not repent, we cannot be saved. Here seems to be another strange and striking opposition between the doctrine of the New Testament, and that of the fatalist. In short, all the precepts of morality and religion, all purposes of reformation, and all those sentiments of regret, self-condemnation, and sorrow, which accompany repentance, proceed on a supposition, that certain actions are so far in our power, that we may either do them or not do them. And most of the words we make use of in speaking of the morality of actions are, on the principles of those who deny free agency, unintelligible. Such are the words, *ought, ought not, moral, immoral, merit, demerit, reward, punishment*, and many others.

256. By a very zealous asserter of necessity some concessions have lately been made, which seem to convey notions of this doctrine,

D d

trine,

trine, that are not much in its favour. He says, that nothing can be plainer than the doctrine of necessity, that it is as certain as that two and two are four : and yet he admits, that nine tenths of the generality of mankind will always disbelieve it. What can this mean but that nine tenths of mankind are irrational ; or that necessity is an incredible thing, notwithstanding its being as certain as that two and two are four ; or that the teachers of this doctrine are unable to explain it ? Were it self-evident, I should grant, that argument could not make it plainer. But that cannot be self-evident, which nine tenths of mankind deny, and which many of the acutest philosophers that ever lived have to the satisfaction of thousands proved to be absurd.

257. He admits, that, according to his doctrine of necessity, the Deity is the cause of all the evil, as well as of all the good, actions of his creatures. What can this mean, but either that there is no difference between moral good and moral evil, between harm and injury, between crimes and calamities ; or that the Divine character

ter is as far from being in a moral view perfect, as that of any of his creatures? The same writer affirms, that the doctrine of philosophical necessity is a modern discovery, not older than Hobbes, or, perhaps he might mean, than Spinoza. Strange, that a thing, in which all mankind are so much interested; and of which every man, who thinks, is a competent judge, and has occasion to think and speak, every day of his life; should not have been found out till about two hundred years ago, and should still, in spite of all that can be said for it, although as certain as that two and two are four, be disbelieved by all mankind, a few individuals excepted.—I shall only add, that, if the Deity be, as this author affirms, the cause of all the evil, as well as of all the good, actions of his creatures, resentment and gratitude towards our fellow men are as unreasonable as towards the knife that wounds, or the salve that heals us; and that to repent of the evil I am conscious of having committed would be not only absurd but impious, because it would imply a dissatisfaction with the will

of Him, who was the almighty cause of that evil, and was pleased to make me his instrument in doing it.

258. I deny not, that the opposite doctrine of liberty may be thought to involve in it some difficulties which our limited understanding cannot disentangle, particularly with respect to the Divine Prescience and Decrees. But in most things we find difficulties which we cannot solve; nor can any man, without extreme presumption, affirm, that he distinctly knows, in what manner the Divine Prescience exerts itself, or how the freedom of man's will may be affected by the decrees of God. Such knowledge is too wonderful for us: but of our own free agency we are competent judges, because it is a matter of fact and experience; and because all our moral and religious notions, that is, all our most important knowledge, may be said to be either founded on it, or intimately connected with it.

259. As Omnipotence can do whatever is possible, so Omniscience must know whatever can be known. Every thing, which
God

God has determined to bring *certainly* to pass, he must foresee *as certain*: and can it be thought impossible, that he should foresee, not as *certain* but as *contingent*, that which he has determined to be *contingent* and *not certain*? Or will it be said, that it is not possible for the Almighty to decree contingencies, as well as certainties; to leave it in my power, in certain cases to act according to the free determination of my own mind? Our bodily strength, and our freedom of choice in regard to good and evil, are matters of great moment to us; but the latter can no more interfere with the purposes of divine providence, than the former can retard or accelerate the motion of the earth. It would not be very difficult for a prudent man, who should have the entire command of a few children, to make them in certain cases promote his views, without laying any restraint on their will. Infinitely more easy must it be, for the almighty and omniscient Governor of the universe, so to over-rule all the actions of his moral creatures, as to make them promote,

promote, even while they are acting freely, his own wise and good purposes.

S E C T. II.

Further Remarks on the Will.*

360. **I**T was said, that the power of beginning motion, exerted of choice by a rational and intelligent being, may be called Volition or Will. The word *will* has other significations, but I wish at present to use it in this sense. I call it a power of beginning motion; meaning by the term *motion* every change in the human mind or body which is usually denominated action.—When we *will* to do a thing, we believe that thing to be in our power; and when we *will* we always will something, (and this something may be termed the object of volition); even as when we remember we always remember something, which may be called the object of remem-

* See Dr Reid's Essays on the active powers of man.

brance.

brance. Things therefore done voluntarily are to be distinguished from things done, like a new-born infant's sucking, by instinct, as well as from things done by habit, like the constant motion of the eyelids.

261. *Will* and *Desire* are not the same. What we *will* is an action, and our own action: but we may *desire* what is not action, as that our friends may be happy, or what is no action of ours, as that our friends may behave well. Nay we may *desire* what we do not *will*, as when we are thirsty and abstain from drink on account of health; and we may *will* what we *have an aversion to*, as when, on the same account, we force ourselves to swallow a nauseous medicine. Let us also distinguish between *will* and *command*; although, in common language, what a man commands is often called his will. We *will* to do some action of our own; we *command* an action to be done by another. Desires and Commands are also, in popular language, confounded: but here too we must distinguish. "O if such a thing were given
" me"

“ me,” is not the same with “ Give me such a thing :” and if a tyrant, to get a pretence for punishing, were to command what he knew could not be done, it might be a command without desire.

262. I said, that when we *will* to do a thing, we believe that thing to be in our power, or to depend upon our will. In exerting myself to raise a weight from the ground, I believe, either that I can raise it, or that it is in my power to try whether I can raise it or not. A very great weight, which I know to be far above my strength, I never attempt to raise. I never exert myself for the purpose of flying; I never *will* to speak a language I have not learned; because I know it to be out of my power. Our will may however be exerted in attempting to do what we know to be at the first trial impracticable; as when one begins to learn to perform on a musical instrument: but in this case we believe, that frequent attempts properly directed will make the thing possible, and at last easy. And we know, that the first principles of musical performance, as well

as of other arts, are adapted to the ability of a beginner, and consequently in his power.

263. Some acts of the will are transient, others more lasting. When I *will* to stretch out my hand and snuff the candle, the energy of the will is at an end as soon as the action is over. When I *will* to read a book, or write a letter, from beginning to end, without stopping, the will is exerted till the reading or the writing be finished. We may *will* to persist for a course of years in a certain conduct; to read, for example, so much Greek every day, till we learn to read it with ease: this sort of will is commonly called a resolution. We may will or resolve to do our duty on all occasions as long as we live; and he who so resolves, and perseveres in the resolution, is a good man. A single act of virtue is a good thing, but does not make a man of virtue: he only is so, who resolves to be virtuous, and adheres to his purpose. Aristotle rightly thought, that virtue consists not in transient acts, but in a settled habit or disposition; agreeable to which is the old defini-

E e

tion

tion of justice, *Constans et perpetua voluntas* suum cuique tribuendi. So of the other virtues. He is not a temperate or valiant man, who is so now and then only, or merely by chance; but he who is intentionally and habitually temperate or valiant. Him, in like manner, we judge to be a vicious character, not who through the weakness of human nature has fallen into transgression, but who persists in transgression, or intends to transgress, or is indifferent whether he transgresses or not, or resolves that he will not take the trouble to guard against it.

264. For actions wherein the will has no concern, a man, as observed already, is not accounted either virtuous or vicious, and can deserve neither reward nor punishment, neither praise nor blame. This is the universal belief of rational nature, and on this the laws of all enlightened nations are founded. It is true, that laws have entailed inconvenience upon the guiltless offspring of the guilty. But such laws either were unjust; or were made with a political view, to restrain fathers the more effectually

ly from certain great crimes, high treason for example : in which last case they may, as many human laws are, be good upon the whole, because profitable to the community, though a grievous hardship to individuals. Inequalities of this kind are unavoidable. At my return from a long voyage my health may require the refreshments of the land ; and yet, if there be a suspicion of plague in the ship, I may, without having any reason to charge the government with cruelty, be forced to remain on board many days, even though my death should be the consequence. With his parents a man is indeed so closely connected, that, even where the law does not interpose at all, he may, and often must, derive good from their virtue, or evil from their misconduct ; competence, for example, from their industry, or poverty from their sloth ; a sound constitution from their temperance, or hereditary disease from their sensuality ; honour from their merit, or dishonour from their infamy. This may suggest an obvious and important lesson both to parents and to children.

S E C T. III.

Principles of Action.

265. **I**N strict propriety of speech, and in all rational inquiry concerning the imputableness of actions, every thing that is called *human action* is supposed to depend on the human will. But, in common language, the word *action* is used with more latitude, and animals are often said to *act*, or do, what they do not will, and even what they do not think of. An infant is said to act, while it sucks; a bee, while it gathers honey; and a man while he takes snuff without knowing that he takes it, as I have been told that snuff-takers often do. In speaking of the *principles of action*, I must now use the word in this inaccurate and popular sense. A *principle of human action* is, that which incites a man to act *. Our principles of action are many and various; I will not undertake to give a complete enumeration: it may be sufficient to

* See Dr Reid on the active powers of man.

specify

specify a few of the most remarkable; which I arrange under the following heads.

1. INSTINCT. 2. HABIT. 3. APPETITE.
4. PASSIONS and AFFECTIONS. 5. MORAL PRINCIPLES; deferring these last at present, as they will find a place hereafter in Moral Philosophy.

OF INSTINCT.

266. INSTINCT is a natural impulse to certain actions which the animal performs without deliberation, without having any end in view, and frequently without knowing what it does. It is thus the new-born infant sucks, and swallows, and breathes; operations, which in their mechanism are very complex, though attended with no labour or thought to the infant: thus, when hungry, it has recourse to the mother's milk, before it knows that milk will relieve it: thus it cries while in pain or in fear; and thus it is soothed by the simple song and soft accents of the nurse. Similar instincts are found in the young of other animals;

animals : and, as they advance in life, the same unerring principle, derived not from experience, or art, or habit, but from the all-wise author and preserver of their being, makes them provide for themselves and their young, and utter those voices, betake themselves to that course of life, and use those means of self-defence, which are suitable to their circumstances and nature.

267. The arts of man are all of human invention, and advance to perfection gradually ; and long practice is necessary to make us perform in them with ease. But the arts of inferior animals, and their *manufactures*, (if we may use so strong a catachresis) ; the nest of the bird, for example, the honey and honeycomb of the bee, the web of the spider, the threads of the silkworm, the holes or houses of the beaver, &c. are not invented or taught, are uniform in all the individuals of a species, are not more exquisite now than they were four thousand years ago, and, except where outward circumstances are unfavourable, are all perfect in their kind. Those things, however,

however, which the more sagacious animals may *be taught* to do, are more or less perfectly done, according to their degree of sagacity, and the skill and pains employed in their education.

268. Instinct, being partly intended to make up for the weakness or the want of understanding in animals, is more or less necessary to their preservation and comfort, according as the understanding is more or less defective. In the beginning of life we do much by instinct, and little by understanding: when we have got the use of reason, the case is in some measure reversed. Yet, even when arrived at maturity, there are occasions innumerable on which, because reason cannot guide us, we must be guided by instinct. Reason informs us, that we must do a certain action, swallow our food, for example, stretch out our arm, move our limbs, &c.: but *how* the action is done we know not; we only know that it follows or accompanies an energy of our will. We will to swallow, to walk, &c. and the very complex machinery of nerves and muscles necessary to

to those actions is set agoing by instinct, and instantly produces them. There are actions too, as the motion of our eye-lids, which must be done so frequently, that, if we were obliged to intend and will them every time they are done, we could do nothing else: these therefore are generally instinctive. And sometimes, for our preservation, we must act so suddenly that there is no time for determination and willing; as when we pull away our hand from any thing that burns it, shut our eyes against a stroke that seems to be aimed at them, or throw out our arm to recover the balance of our body when in danger of falling. Such motions may also be ascribed to instinct; as well as those efforts which animals, in immediate danger of death by drowning, strangling, &c. make to preserve themselves.

269. Our proneness to imitation is also in some degree instinctive. In the arts indeed, as painting and poetry, imitation is the effect of will and design. But a child who lives in society learns of himself to speak, though no particular pains be taken to

to teach him; and acquires at the same time the accent, and frequently the sound of voice, of those with whom he lives, as well as their modes of thinking and acting. What a happiness, then, is it for a young person to be brought up in the company of the wise and the good? Wild men, who in their younger years lived savage, solitary, and dumb, and were afterwards brought into civilised society, (a few instances there have been of such), were found incapable of acquiring either speech or a right use of reason, though pains were taken to teach them both.—In many cases children, and in some cases grown men, may be said to *believe* by instinct. Thus an infant believes what a man seriously tells him is true; and that what has once or twice happened in certain circumstances will in the same circumstances happen again, as in the case of his finger having been burned by the candle. And thus we all believe, that things *are* as they appear to our *senses*, and that things *were* what we *remember* them to have been.

F f

OF

OF HABIT.

270. The word HABIT is used in two different significations, which frequently are, and may without inconvenience be, confounded in common language. It denotes a facility of doing a thing acquired by having frequently done it; in this sense of the word, *habit* can hardly be called a *principle of action*. See § 265. Habit is a principle of action, when, in consequence of having frequently done a thing, we acquire an inclination to do it. A man, who is accustomed to walk every day at a certain hour, is uneasy if he be kept from walking: and they who read much are never happy at a distance from books. Choose the best course of life, said an ancient moralist, and custom will make it the most pleasant. If frequency of performance did not produce facility, art would be impossible; but why the one should produce the other we cannot explain; we can only say that such is the law of our nature. And if doing a thing frequently did not

not breed an inclination to do it, the improvement of our nature would be impossible, and we could hardly be said to be moral beings. Without instinct an infant could not live to be a man, and without habit a man would always continue as helpless as an infant.

271. Habit, in both senses of the word, is observable in the more sagacious brutes, and in none more than in dogs trained to hunting, and horses inured to the discipline of war. The war-horse not only learns to obey command, but is impetuous to obey it; and the beagle seems to take as much delight as his master in the sports of the field. The power of habit in forming rational beings to vice or virtue, to elegant or rustic manners, to attention or inattention, to industry or idleness, to temperance or sensuality, to passionateness or forbearance, to manual dexterity or the want of it, is universally acknowledged: something, no doubt, depends on the peculiar constitution of different minds; and something too perhaps on the structure and temperament of different bodies: but in

fashioning the character, and in giving impulse and direction to genius, the influence of habit is certainly very great.

272. As in early life our powers of imitation are strongest, our minds most docile, and our bodily organs most flexible, so good or bad habits, both mental and corporeal, are then most easily acquired. Hence the necessity of early discipline, the unspeakable advantages of a good education, and the innumerable evils consequent upon a bad one. It amazes one to consider, what progress, in the most difficult arts, may be made, when our faculties of mind and body are properly directed in the beginning of life; and how easy an action, which at first seemed impracticable, comes to be when it has grown habitual. Performances in music and painting, and many other sorts of manual dexterity, might be mentioned as examples: to say nothing of those barbarous arts of balancing, tumbling, and legerdemain, which in all ages have been deemed so wonderful, that the clown is inclined to impute them to magic, and even the more considerate spectator,

spectator, when he first sees them, can hardly believe his own eyes.

273. But nothing in a more astonishing manner displays the power of habit, or rather of habit and genius united, in facilitating the performance of the most complex and most difficult exertions of the human mind, than the eloquent and unstudied harangue of a graceful speaker, in a great political assembly. It is long before we learn to articulate words; long before we can deliver them with exact propriety; and longer still before we can recollect a sufficient variety of them, and, out of many that may occur at once, select instantly the most proper. Then, the rules of grammar, of logic, of rhetoric, and of good-breeding, which can on no account be dispensed with, are so numerous, that volumes might be filled with them, and years employed in acquiring the ready use of them. Yet to the accomplished orator all this is so familiar, in consequence of being habitual, that, without thinking of his rules, or violating any one of them, he applies them all; and has, at the same time, present to his

his mind whatever he may have heard of importance in the course of the debate, and whatever in the laws or customs of his country may relate to the business in hand: which, as a very acute and ingenious author observes, “if it were not more common, would appear more wonderful, than that a man should dance blindfold, without being burned, amidst a thousand red-hot plowshares*.”

OF APPETITE.

274. The word APPETITE in common language often means hunger, and sometimes, figuratively, any strong desire. It is here used to signify a particular sort of uneasy feeling in animals, returning at certain intervals, and demanding such gratification as is necessary to support the life of the individual, or to continue the species. The gratification being obtained, the appetite ceases for a while, and is afterwards

* See Reid on the active powers of man. Essay III.

renewed.

renewed. Hunger and thirst are two of our natural appetites; their importance to our preservation is obvious; brutes have them as well as we; and the same remarks that are here made on the one may with a little variation be made on the other. Hunger is a complex sensation, and implies two things quite different from each other, an uneasy feeling, and a desire of food. In very young infants it is at first only an uneasy feeling; which, however, prompts the little animal instinctively to suck and swallow such nourishment as comes in his way, and without which he must inevitably perish. Afterwards, when experience has taught him, that the uneasy feeling is to be removed by food, the one suggests the other to his mind, and hunger becomes in him the same complex feeling as in us. In the choice of food, the several species of irrational animals are guided, by instinct chiefly, to that which is most suitable to their nature: and in this respect their instinct is sometimes less fallible than human reason. The mariner in a desert island is shy of eating those unknown fruits, however

ever delectable to sight and smell, which are not marked with the pecking of birds.

275. Before we cease to be infants, our reason informs us that food is indispensable; but through the whole of life appetite continues to be necessary, to remind us of our natural wants, and the proper time of supplying them: for as nourishment becomes more needful, appetite grows more clamorous; till at last it calls off our attention from every thing else, whether business or amusement; and, if the gratification be still withheld, terminates in delirium and death. Hunger and thirst are the strongest of all our appetites, being the most essential to our preservation: it is generally owing to criminal indulgence, when any other appetite acquires unreasonable strength.—In obeying the natural call of appetite, in eating when hungry or drinking when thirsty, there is neither virtue nor vice; unless by so doing we intentionally promote some good purpose, or violate some duty. But rightly to manage our appetites, so as to keep them in due subordination to reason, is a chief part of virtue;

virtue ; as the unlimited or licentious indulgence of them degrades our nature, and perverts all our rational faculties.

276. Rest after motion is essential to life, as well as food after fasting ; and, when rest becomes necessary, nature gives the sensation of *weariness* ; which, like hunger and thirst, comes at last to be irresistible, is made up of an uneasy feeling and a desire of a certain object, goes off on being gratified, and after a certain interval returns. But we must not call weariness an appetite, nor is it commonly called so. Appetite prompts to action, weariness to rest ; appetite rises though no action have preceded, weariness follows action as the effect follows the cause. We have a sort of appetite for action in general : it may be called *activity* ; and, when excessive or troublesome to others, is termed restlessness. For, as action is necessary to our welfare both in mind and body, our constitution would be defective, if we had not something to stimulate to action, independently on the dictates of reason. This activity is very conspicuous in children ; who, as soon as

G g

they

they have got the faculty and habit of moving their limbs, and long before they can be said to have the use of reason, are, when in health and awake, almost continually in motion. It is, however, through the whole of life, so necessary, that without it there can be no happiness. To a person of a sound constitution idleness is misery: if long continued, it impairs, and at last destroys, the vigour of both the soul and the body.

277. It were well for man, if he had no appetites but those that nature gave him; for they are but few; and they are all beneficial, not only by ministering to his preservation and comfort, but also by rousing him to industry and other laudable exertions. But of *unnatural* or artificial appetites, if they may be called *appotites*, which man creates for himself, there is no end; and the more he acquires of these, the more he is dependent, and the more liable to want and wretchedness. It behoves us therefore, as we value our own peace, and the dignity of our nature, to guard against them. Some of the propensities

fries now alluded to may no doubt have been occasioned in part by disease of body, or distress of mind ; but they are in general owing to idleness and affectation, or to a foolish desire of imitating fashionable absurdity. They are not all criminal, but they all have a tendency to debase us ; and by some of them men have made themselves disagreeable, useless, contemptible, and even a nuisance in society. When I mention tobacco, strong liquors, opiates, gluttony, and gaming, it will be known what I mean by unnatural appetite, and acknowledged that I have not characterised it too severely.

S E C T. IV.

The Subject continued.

Passions and Affections.

THE word *Passion* properly means Suffering ; but is seldom used in that sense, except when we speak of our

G g 2 Saviour's

Saviour's passion, as in the beginning of *Acts of the Apostles*. By *Passion* the common people mean little more than *Anger*; and *anger* is a *passion*, but it is only one of many. Some philosophers have used the word to signify whatever moves us to action; but this use of it is too extensive. The sense in which I here understand it will appear by and by.—When we act voluntarily, it is in order to obtain what is, or appears to be, good, or to avoid what is, or appears to be, evil. Good real or apparent excites desire; evil real or apparent excites aversion: but in this acceptation, the words *desire* and *aversion* are used with great latitude. Desires and Aversions are two copious classes of passions; and assume different forms, and are called by different names, according to the nature of the good or evil that draws them forth, and its situation with respect to us. For example; present good gives rise to *joy*, probable good to *hope*, present evil to *sorrow*, probable evil to *fear*, good qualities in another person raise our *love*, or *liking*, evil qualities in another our *dislike*, &c.

279. Each

279. Each variety of desire and aversion, as well as every other passion, is agreeable in the feeling, or is disagreeable; and, if in any degree violent, is attended with some commotion in the body as well as in the mind. For, by varying the human countenance and attitude, painters may express almost every passion; which could not be, if the passions did not make perceptible changes in the outward appearance of the body. A passion therefore may be said to be “A commotion of the soul, attended with pleasure or pain, affecting both the mind and the body, and arising from the view of something which is, or appears to be, good or evil.” If we rank *admiration* among the passions, which I think is commonly done, we must vary the last clause thus: — “and arising from the view of something which is, or appears to be, good, or evil, or uncommon.” In treating of the Passions, I shall, first, make some general remarks upon them; secondly, I shall endeavour to arrange them in classes, and describe the more remarkable ones; and I shall conclude

clude with some rules for the right management of this part of our moral nature. I do not promise, I will not even attempt, a complete enumeration. Some passions may probably occur to me, which yet I shall forbear to mention, because I would not put my hearers in mind of them.

280. These emotions have got the name of *Passions*, probably because in receiving the first impressions of them our mind is passive, being acted upon, or influenced, by the body, by external things, or by the imagination.—We may distinguish between the *cause* of a passion and its *object*. The *cause* is that which raises it; the *object* is that towards which it prompts us to act, or on which it inclines us to fix our attention. The cause and the object of a passion are often, but not always, one and the same thing. Thus present good is both the cause and the object of *joy*; we rejoice in it, and we rejoice on account of it. But of *love* or *esteem* the cause is some agreeable quality, and the object is some person supposed to possess that agreeable quality: of *resentment*, in like manner, injury is the cause,

cause, and the injurious person the object.

281. That may be well enough understood which it is not easy to describe philosophically. This part of human nature is in general so well understood, that most people know what will draw forth the passions of men, and in what manner those passions operate; yet a complete analysis of them is still, if I mistake not, a *desideratum* in moral science. The following sketch (for the *outline* of which I am indebted to Dr Watts) may have its use, but is very susceptible of improvement. The difficulties attending this subject arise from several causes: from the insufficiency of human language, which does not supply a name for each form and variety of human affection, and of course makes it necessary to express different affections by the same name; from the complex nature of the passions themselves, as they vary their appearance in men of different characters, and in the same man at different times and in different circumstances; and perhaps too from that partiality, which inclines us to think

think and speak too favourably of those passions that most easily beset ourselves, and with too little favour of such as may seem to predominate in other men.

282. The Passions have been variously arranged according to the various views which have been taken of them. They may be divided into Pleasant and Painful. Criminal passions bring pain, virtuous affections pleasure. And therefore to cherish good affections makes a man happy, and to indulge evil passions makes him wretched: happiness being rather a habit of the mind, than a thing that depends on outward circumstances. For, amidst the greatest worldly prosperity, the state of a man's mind, who is haunted with the horrors of a guilty conscience, or with envy, jealousy, malice, and other evil passions, may make him completely miserable; and disease and poverty united will not make that person unhappy, who has a good conscience, and is piously resigned to the Divine will.—It may be objected, that some evil passions, as revenge, give pleasure; and that some good ones, pity for example, are painful.

But

But the answer is easy. Of pity, as both a painful and a pleasurable emotion, I have spoken already (§ 191.): and, with respect to revenge, I shall only observe at present, that though it may to an indelicate and inconsiderate mind give a momentary gratification, even as gluttony and excessive drinking may to a depraved appetite, it can never bring happiness along with it;—because it is accompanied with many tormenting thoughts; because the promiscuous perpetration of it would unhinge society, and in time exterminate the human race; and because the opposite virtue of forgiveness is one of the most amiable and most delightful (I had almost said, most godlike) affections whereof rational nature is capable.

283. Though the passions are justly reckoned principles of action, (indeed if we had no passions we should never act voluntarily, at least we should never act with alacrity or vigour), they may however be divided into such as *do not* prompt to action, and such as *do*. Of the former class, which incline rather to rest, by fixing the

H h

attention

attention upon their causes or objects, are *admiration*, *joy*, and *sorrow*. Of the latter, which are properly active principles, are *hope*, *fear*, *desire*, *aversion*, *benevolence*, *gratitude*, *anger*, &c. If *joy* in the possession of good be blended with the *fear* of losing it, this will produce an active propensity, disposing us to exert ourselves in the preservation of it. In like manner, if *sorrow* be mixed with *hope*, as in the case of one whose friend is dangerously ill; or with *fear*, or with *curiosity*, as in the case of one who hears he has lost a friend, but is not informed of the person; — in these cases, *sorrow* will become active, and make a man exert himself in procuring relief for his friend in the one case, and in obtaining full information in the other. In all our active passions there is a certain degree of anxiety, restlessness, or desire; which however is not always painful. *Benevolence* is anxious to promote another's good, and *gratitude*, to make acknowledgements and requite the favour; but these are delightful emotions notwithstanding.

284. The passions may be divided into
selfish

selfish and *benevolent*: the former aim at our own good, the latter at the good of others. A rational desire of our own happiness, which may be called *self-love*, is a powerful and useful propensity, and when rightly managed tends to happiness universal. In this respect, "true self-love and social" are the same." For that must be beneficial to the species, which, without injury to any, promotes the good of the individual; even as that which removes disease from one of the limbs contributes to the health of the whole body. Self-love, when excessive, or when injurious to others, may be called *selfishness*, and is a hateful disposition.

285. With rational self-love we must not confound those desires which men take to particular worldly things, as power, pleasure, and riches. For so far are these from making a man happy, that they often make him miserable. And it is not so much with a view to happiness, that ambitious, covetous, and sensual men pursue their favourite schemes, as in order to obtain power, wealth, and pleasure; to the possession of which they must know, if they

H h 2

know

know any thing, that happiness is not annexed. But without power, pleasure, wealth, say they, we cannot be happy, and therefore we pursue them. Sots in like manner say they cannot be happy without the means of intoxication. But surely no man in his senses can believe that self-love is gratified by excessive drinking; or that brandy and tobacco * have any thing to do with rational felicity, except perhaps by their tendency to destroy it. There have been drunkards, who could persevere in their vile habits, even while they knew that ruin and death would be the consequence. Such men being really their own enemies, it would be a strange abuse of words to say that they were actuated by self-love: and the same thing may be affirmed of all who are enslaved to ambition, covetousness, or sensuality.

286. It has been questioned, whether there be in man any principle of pure benevolence, which aims at the good of others only, without any view to the gratification of one's self. By doing good to others we

* I speak of them not as medicines but as luxuries.

do indeed most effectually gratify ourselves ; for what can give a man more pleasure, than to reflect that he has been instrumental in promoting a fellow-creature's happiness ! Yet every good man may be sensible, that he often does good, and wishes well, to others, without any immediate view to his own gratification, nay without thinking of himself at all. In fact, if we had not principles purely benevolent, we could not gratify ourselves by doing others good. Children have been known to sacrifice their inclinations to the happiness of those they loved, when they themselves believed that their own interest would in every respect suffer by doing so. It is not my meaning, that all children, or all men, are so disinterested ; I only say, that pure benevolence is to be found in human nature : a doctrine, which, though to many it may appear self-evident, has been much controverted ; and which there are men in the world, who, judging of all others by themselves, will never heartily acquiesce in.

287. It has also been made a question, whether

whether there be in man a principle of universal benevolence. But does not every good man wish well to all mankind? and is not this universal benevolence? He who wishes harm to those who never offended him, or who cares not whether a fellow-creature be happy or unhappy, is a monster, and deserves not the name of a man. It is true, that every man, even in civilized society, is not capable of forming extensive views of things, or of considering the whole human race, or the whole system of percipient beings, as the objects of his benevolence. But in every good man there is a benevolent principle, which makes him wish well, and do good, to every one to whom he has it in his power to be serviceable; and this sort of benevolence will do as much real good in the world, as benevolence universal. Accordingly our religion, which is suited to our general nature, and enjoins nothing as incumbent on all men, but what every man, of extensive or narrow views, of more or less knowledge, may perform;—our religion, I say, instead of recommending universal benevolence in
the

the abstract, requires, that we do good to all men, *as we have opportunity*; and commands us to love our neighbour as ourselves; declaring every man to be our neighbour, who needs our aid, and to whom we have the means of giving it.

288. Concerning universal benevolence some have argued in this manner. "Benevolence arises from love; and love from the view of agreeable qualities in another. Now the good qualities of others can be known to us in two ways only; from personal acquaintance, or from information. Of one whom we never saw or heard of, we cannot know either the good qualities, or the bad; him therefore we cannot love; but benevolence is founded in love: therefore towards such a person we cannot be benevolent. It follows, that there can be no such affection as universal benevolence in human nature." This reasoning is good for nothing. Whether the principle in question be a part of our frame, is a query that relates to a matter of fact, and is therefore to be determined, not by argument,

argument, but by observation and experience. He who is conscious, that he wishes well to all his fellow-creatures, is a man of universal benevolence; and I have no scruple to affirm, that every good man does so, and that to do so is in the power of every man.

289. Though one were to grant the premises of the foregoing argument, the conclusion would not follow. For, though we are not personally acquainted with every man upon earth, we know that all men possess certain agreeable qualities, for which we may and ought to love them. We know, that all men are percipient beings, are endowed with reason and speech, are animated with souls intelligent and immortal, are descended from our first parents, and are dependent on the same Great Being on whom we depend. On these accounts, a good man loves all mankind; and may therefore, if benevolence arise from love, be benevolent towards all mankind. The very circumstance of our all inhabiting the same planet, and of being all liable to the same wants and infirmities, will naturally
serve

serve as a bond of endearment; for similarity of fortune never fails to attach men to one another.

290. Some passions are called unnatural, as *envy*, *malevolence*, and *pride*. The reason is, because they are destructive of good affections that are natural. We naturally love excellence wherever we see it; but the envious man hates it, and wishes to be superior to others, not by raising himself by honest means, but by injuriously pulling them down. It is natural to rejoice in the good of others; but the malevolent heart triumphs in their misery. It is natural for us to regard mankind as our companions and brethren; but the proud man regards himself only, despising others as if they were beneath him. These unnatural passions are always evil; they make a man odious to his fellow-creatures, and unhappy in himself; and they tend to the utter depravation of the human soul. Anger and resentment may lead to mischief; but, if kept within the due bounds, are useful for self-defence, and therefore not to be altogether suppressed. We *may* be angry
I i without

without sin; and not to resent injury is the same thing as not to perceive it, which would be insensibility. Nay on some occasions resentment and anger are further useful, by cherishing in us an abhorrence of injustice, and fortifying our minds against it. But pride, malevolence, and envy, can never be useful or innocent; to indulge them even for a moment is criminal.

291. The passions have long ago been divided into *calm* and *violent*. Of the former sort, commonly termed *Affections*, are Benevolence, Pity, Gratitude, and in general all virtuous and innocent emotions. Of the latter, are Anger, Hatred, Avarice, Ambition, Revenge, excessive Joy or Sorrow, and in general all criminal and all immoderate emotions; which, in imitation of the Greeks, we may call *Passions*, using the word in a strict sense. The former are salutary to the soul, the latter dangerous. Those resemble serene weather, accompanied with such gales, and refreshing showers, as prevent stagnation, and cheer by their variety; these may be likened to storms
and

and other elemental commotions that terrify and destroy. Violent passions, very properly expressed by the Latin word *perturbationes*, always discompose the mind and impair reason to a certain degree; and have been known to rise even to phrensy, and hurry men on to perpetrations, that have shortened their days, and made life miserable, and death infamous. Many of them are attended with feverish symptoms; some give an unaccountable addition of bodily strength, which however soon ends in languor; and some have brought on fainting, apoplexy, and instant death. Nothing more needs be said to show the dreadful effects of violent passion, the indispensable duty of guarding against it, and the inexcusable temerity of speaking and acting under its influence.

292. The Peripatetics, or followers of Aristotle, rightly thought, that the Passions, dangerous as they are, ought not to be extinguished, even though that were possible; for that, being natural, they must be useful; but that they are to be regulated by reason, and kept within the bounds of moderation.

deration. All those violent emotions, that urge us on to pleasure or to the avoidance of pain by a blind impulse, were by the schoolmen, who professed to derive their tenets from the same source, referred to what they called the Sensitive Appetite, because they seemed to partake more of the senses than of reason : and those calmer affections, that prompt us to pursue good rationally and with tranquillity, they referred to the Rational Appetite, because more nearly allied to reason than to the senses.

293. Pythagoras and Plato ascribe to the soul two natures, or, to give it in the words of Cicero, *animam in duas partes dividunt*, divide the soul into two parts, the one rational, the other irrational. In the rational nature they placed what they called Tranquillity, that is, as Cicero explains the word, *placida et quieta constantia*, an easy and quiet consistency or uniformity. To the irrational part they referred what the Greeks called *πάθη* or passions, and the Latins, more properly, *perturbationes* or discomposures, those turbulent emotions both
of

of anger and of desire, which are contrary and unfriendly to reason. There is, in Cicero's fourth book of Tufculan Inquiries, a particular enumeration of the feveral forts of *Perturbationes* and *Conftantiae*, according to the Stoical fyftem. The paffage deferves attention; not fo much for the philofophy contained in it, as becaufe it afcertains the fignification of fome Latin words, which are not for the moft part exactly underftood.

294. Indeed it is not very eafy to comprehend what the Stoics fay on this fubject. Sometimes they would feem to require the extinction of all our paffions, of all at leaft that are influenced by external things; for they hold, that nothing external is either good or evil, virtue being, according to them, not only the greateft but the only good. At other times they are not fo unfavourable to the paffions; but grant indulgence to thofe that interrupt not that calm conftancy, and fteady uniformity, which they fupposed to conftitute the glory of the human character. Thus they allow, that *gaudium*, or rational and tranquil

tranquil joy, may be permitted to have a place in the human breast; but they proscribe *letitia*, which it seems is a more tumultuous sort of gladness, as unworthy of a wise man. They are indeed licentious, and frequently whimsical, in their use of words; so that it is difficult to understand them in their own tongues, the Greek and Latin, and still more so to translate their doctrines into any modern language. Mrs Carter has however been singularly successful in her version of the discourses of Epicurus; to which she has prefixed an elegant introduction, of more value than all the rest of the book. To that introduction I would refer those who wish to form a just idea of the spirit and genius of the Stoical philosophy.

295. It cannot be doubted, that pure and created spirits may be susceptible of emotions somewhat similar to human passions, as Joy, Gratitude, Admiration, Esteem, Love, and the like. Hence some authors, in treating of the passions, have divided them into Spiritual and Human. The former we are supposed to be capable of

of in common with angels and other created spirits; the latter are peculiar to our present constitution as composed of soul and body. I need not take further notice of this division. Through the whole of the ensuing arrangement I must be understood to speak of the passions, as they affect human creatures in the present state. Of the emotions of pure spirits we may form *conjectures*; but we can speak with certainty, and scientifically, of those only which are known to us by experience.

S E C T. V.

The Subject continued.

Passions and Affections.

296. **T**HE first class of Passions that I shall take notice of comprehends *Admiration*, and some other emotions allied to it. What is either *uncommon* in itself, or endowed with uncommon qualities, raises admiration or wonder. The sun is seen every

every day, and therefore is in one respect not uncommon; yet who does not *admire* his extraordinary magnitude and splendour, and beneficial influences! When, as in this example, the object we contemplate is transcendently excellent or great, admiration becomes *astonishment*; and an uncommon or unexpected object appearing on a sudden raises within us an emotion called *surprise*. The passions of this class, when under no restraint, naturally express themselves by opening the mouth and eyes, raising the eyebrows, lifting up the hands and spreading the fingers: surprise, when violent, occasions starting and other nervous symptoms. These are all kindred emotions, and yet they are not the same.

297. *Admiration* and *wonder* may be distinguished. The former is generally a pleasurable passion, its object being for the most part good, or great, or both; the latter may be agreeable, or otherwise, according to circumstances. We wonder at the folly and wickedness of some people, but can hardly be said to admire it. We wonder at the ingenuity displayed in harness-
ing

ing a flea to a microscopic chariot; but the genius of the artist we do not admire, because it exerts itself in nothing that can be called either great or good; and because, though at first view it may yield a slight gratification, one is rather vexed than pleased to think that so much skill and time should be thrown away upon such a trifle. We may also distinguish between admiration and surprise. The sudden appearance of a person in a place where we did not expect him may surprise us without being matter of admiration. And admiration, as already observed, is generally, if not always, pleasing; but it is not so with surprise.

298. We speak of disagreeable as well as agreeable surprises, and of astonishment that confounds, as well as of astonishment that delights; but of disagreeable or painful admiration I think we seldom or never speak. It would be an agreeable surprise, if, on going to visit a friend whom we believed to be dangerously ill, we should find him in perfect health; and in contrary circumstances our surprise would be

K k

painful

painful in the extreme. Delightful astonishment we receive from the contemplation of pure sublimity (see §. 168.); but the astonishment that seizes the young warrior, when the thunder of the battle begins, confounds at first and stupifies, tho' valour and a sense of duty soon get the better of it. This extreme and painful astonishment is sometimes, both in English and Latin, called *conservation*; as if it had a tendency to throw a man down.—It is to be observed here, and while we treat of the passions it must not be forgotten, that as two or more passions really different may in some respects be similar, it is not strange, that the name of one should often be put figuratively for another. Instances might be given of the words *admiration*, *surprise*, *astonishment*, and *wonder*, used indiscriminately; but the philosopher must endeavour to distinguish as well as he can. From this licentious or indefinite use of language, disputes frequently arise where there is no real difference of opinion.

299. Admiration, says Plato, is the mother of wisdom, but, when excessive or misplaced,

misplaced, becomes folly. The young and inexperienced are most liable to it, and to them it is, unless directed to mean or improper objects, peculiarly beneficial: for curiosity prompts them to search for what is new, and admiration fixes their view upon it till it be imprinted on the memory. Our admiration of things great or good heightens the pleasure we take in them; and the astonishment, that arises when any thing uncommonly evil attracts our notice, serves to quicken disgust and preserve us from contagion. Horace considers what the Greeks called *αἰδουμένη*, *nil admirari*, an exemption from admiration, as a security against those turbulent emotions that interrupt the happiness of life: but he is there speaking of that admiration which is bestowed upon unworthy objects. And in this view his doctrine is right. For whatever raises this passion is apt to kindle others of equal or superior violence, as love, hatred, or desire; and where these are improperly directed, the mind must be subject to perturbations incompatible with virtue, and consequently with happiness.

K k 2

—So.

—So much for the first order of passions, whereof the object is in general *uncommonness*. See § 279.

300. A much more copious class are those of the second order; which take their rise from the view of what is, or appears to be, *good* or *evil*. That which is, or appears to be *good*, or *agreeable*, raises some modification of *Love*: that which is, or appears to be, *evil*, or *disagreeable*, excites one form or other of *Hatred*. Now a thing may seem to be good, either *in itself* simply, or both *in itself* and also *with a reference* to us: and that which, with respect to us as well as in itself, appears to be good, may seem fit, or in a condition, either to *do us good*, or to *receive good from us*. In like manner, a thing may seem to be evil, *in itself* simply, or both *in itself* and also *with a reference to us*: and that which, with respect to us as well as in itself, appears to be evil, may seem fit, either to *do us evil*, or to *receive evil from us*. From good and evil things thus arranged, rise three forms of *love* and of its opposite *hatred*: I shall call them, *Esteem* and *Contempt*;

tempt; Benevolence and Malevolence; Complacency and Dislike. Esteem, benevolence, and complacency, may be so blended as that one and the same being shall be the object of all the three; and this happens when that being appears good in itself, fit to do us good, and fit to receive good from us. In like manner, contempt, malevolence, and dislike, may unite so as to form one complex passion; as when one and the same object appears at once evil in itself, fit to do us evil, and fit to receive evil from us. Thus the passions in question may coalesce; but it is proper to analyse, and consider them separately.

301. That love, which we bear to a person whom we consider as a good character merely, without taking into the account his fitness either to do us good or to receive good from us, may be called *Esteem*. We esteem strangers the moment we form a favourable opinion of their merit; and those good men, whom we never saw or can see, and of whom we know nothing but by report: and this emotion (for *passion* it can hardly be called) inclines us to speak
of

of them with affection and praise, and endeavour to make others think of them as we do. If there be any thing great, or *uncommonly* good in such persons, *admiration* will heighten our esteem into *respect* and *reverence*. Things, as well as persons, are sometimes said to be the objects of esteem; we say, of a good book or a good picture, that it is *well esteemed*: but this use of the word is figurative. To esteem, and to value, are different things. However much we may value a good horse, a convenient house, or a fine garden, we can hardly be said to esteem them.

302. *Mind*, therefore, and *rationality* seem necessary to draw forth the affection we speak of. Nor are these alone sufficient. An acute understanding employed in sophistry, a great genius exerting itself in pursuits either criminal or trifling, may raise our *wonder*, perhaps our *astonishment*, but has no more claim to our esteem, than the juggler, rope-dancer, or dextrous player at cards. In short, *esteem* implies moral approbation; and probity, industry, and other moral virtues, are the objects of it.

This

This being the case, it follows, that we ourselves, as moral beings, may either rise or sink in our own esteem. *Self-esteem*, kept within due bounds, and warranted by the approbation of conscience, would be a rational as well as delightful emotion. But to keep it within due bounds is difficult and rare; for where is the man, who has a just sense, neither too high nor too low, of his own merit!

303. When we think too highly of ourselves, which we are very apt to do, self-esteem degenerates into the evil passions of *vanity, pride, arrogance, and insolence*. These, though nearly allied, are not the same. Pride and vanity may be distinguished. The proud man is sufficiently happy in the consciousness of his own supposed dignity; the vain man is not happy unless he believe that others admire him. Hence the former is reserved and fullen, the latter ostentatious and affable. Pride implies something, and generally not a little, of ill-nature; vanity is often officiously obliging. The vain man laughs, and is himself a ludicrous animal; the proud man is

a

a hateful being, and unwilling even to smile; "Or if he smile, it is in such a sort, "As if he scorn'd to smile at any thing."

It is generally true, that, in proportion as a man behaves proudly towards those whom he thinks beneath him, he is fawning and servile with respect to those whose superiority he feels himself constrained to acknowledge: Swift observes, that the posture of climbing is pretty much the same with that of crawling. Pride and vanity, though in some things inconsistent, have been known to meet in the same character; but he may be vain who is not proud; and some men are too proud to be vain. The language of the former would be, Admire me, and I will love you dearly; that of the latter, We value not your good opinion, and will give ourselves no trouble to obtain it.

304. Pride, arrogance, and insolence, may perhaps be thus distinguished. *Pride*, though no degree of it is excusable, may be so restrained by good-breeding, as not to do injury, or give great offence to others: *Arrogance* is always offensive, because

cause in demanding more than its due (for this meaning appears in the etymology of the word) it manifests a petulant and injurious disposition, that disdains to be controuled by good-breeding or any other restraint. *Insolence* is pride co-operating with arrogance and ill-nature in gratifying itself by insulting others: a temper utterly detestable, and such as no elevation of rank, of wealth, or of genius, can render pardonable in any person: nay, let a man's superiority be what you please, this alone is sufficient to cancel all his merit. And true it is, that they who are really distinguished by rank or by genius are not apt to be either insolent or arrogant; and, if not wholly exempt from pride, will however be careful to conceal it; which it is very much their interest to do. Of all writers the petty verbal critic is, I think, the most addicted to these enormities: Newton's meekness and modesty were as exemplary, as his genius was transcendent.

305. Pride is an artificial passion: in early life, unless enjoined by precept, or recommended by example, it seldom ap-

L 1

pears.

pears. The Psalmist, speaking of his exemption from haughtiness, compares himself to a young child; and the humble docility of little children is, in the New Testament, represented as a necessary preparative to the reception of Christian faith. But there is a sort of pride, from which a weak and inexperienced mind may be in danger, which refuses advice and instruction from an opinion that they are unnecessary: it is sometimes called *Self-conceit*. This mental disease, at first infused by the fondness and flattery of parents perhaps, or of inferiors, gives rise to innumerable disappointments and ridiculous undertakings; and, if years and experience do not speedily remove it, hardens into incurable folly.

306. *Contempt* seems to stand in opposition to Esteem, and arises from our considering an object as insignificant or destitute of merit. But it is not every sort of insignificance that draws forth contempt: things of no value we are apt to overlook, or attend to with indifference; and indifference and neglect are no passions. When

a

a thing is of such a nature as gives us reason to expect to find good in it, we despise it if we find none. An insignificant man, for example, is always the object of contempt, unless he be known to labour under some infirmity which prevents his exerting himself to any good purpose. In those who pretend to knowledge, or have had the means of acquiring it, ignorance is contemptible; but ignorance in a child, in a savage; or in any person who neither pretends to knowledge, nor has ever had the means of it in his power, is not contemptible at all, but pitiable.

307. In like manner, a child's first attempts in drawing or writing, however rude, are not to be condemned: but were a fond father to display such things as wonderfully ingenious, we should despise both the work and him who praises it: yet the child who made it we should not despise, unless he partook of his father's vanity; because from a child nothing better is to be expected. In short, what we despise we always in some degree disapprove; and the object of disapprobation, as of esteem, (see

§ 302.) is a rational being. For I think we cannot be properly said to *disapprove* of an inconvenient house, or untractable horse, nor consequently to *despise* either, even as we cannot be said to *esteem* their opposites; but the conceited architect who built the one, and the knavish jockey who would cheat us in the other, we may have good reason both to disapprove and to despise.

308. A man habitually contemptuous is an unamiable character, because he is generally both malevolent and proud: but it does not follow, that contempt is an evil or useless passion, or a blemish in the human constitution. For the fear of incurring it (and who would not be afraid of being despised!) proves a good preservative from pride, vanity, rashness, and other follies, as well as a powerful incentive to the acquisition of those talents and virtues which the world has reason to expect from us, and for which, if we acquire them, it will esteem us. It is scarce necessary to add, that esteem and contempt are more or less to be regarded, according to the wisdom and goodness of him who esteems and

and contemns. To have the esteem of fools, can gratify none but fools; to be despised by such, can never dishearten a man of spirit. To be praised for good qualities which we are conscious that we do not possess, is, to a generous mind, not pleasing but mortifying; to be despised or blamed by an incompetent or uncandid judge, may give a momentary pain, but ought not to make us unhappy. The lady, who paints her face to make us *admire her complexion* *, and the fop who tells lies to raise our opinion of his wit or valour, are among the most despicable characters in human shape.—*Disdain* and *scorn* are terms denoting different forms or degrees of contempt. To distinguish them with precision, and unexceptionably, would perhaps be difficult, and is not necessary; those words being in general well enough understood.

309. The opposite of Pride is *Humility*; which consists in a just sense of our own imperfections, inclining us to bear with and pity those of others: a most amiable disposition in the sight of both God and

* Face-painting, where it is fashionable and avowed, deceives nobody.

man;

man; but which, as it settles and soothes the mind, and occasions little or no commotion in the bodily frame, is to be called, not a passion, but a virtue. And a virtue it is of the most essential importance to happiness; indeed, without it, there can be no *virtue*, in the Christian sense of the word. Proud men are continually beset with affronts real or imaginary, and harassed with anger, indignation, revenge, and other pernicious and painful emotions, from which the humble are entirely free. The lowly mind is considerate and recollected, benevolent and pious, at peace with itself and with all the world; and is generally accompanied with a simplicity of manners, a serenity of countenance, a gentleness of speech, and a sweetness of voice, which recommend one to the love of good men, and to respect even from the thoughtless. Good-breeding, which all men who understand their own interest are ambitious to acquire, always assumes the look and the language of humility: a proof, that it is universally pleasing; as ostentation and pride are to the same extent and in the same degree offensive.

310. There

310. There is in some minds a timorous diffidence which, making them judge too harshly or too meanly of themselves, depresses them with melancholy thoughts that disqualify them equally for happiness and for the business of life. This cannot be called a fault, but it is a dangerous infirmity; and for the most part owing to disorder of body as well as discomposure of mind. Of our virtue, as it must appear to a being of infinite perfection, we cannot think too meanly; and of our abilities, as compared with those of other men, we should always speak and think modestly. But we shall do well to guard against unreasonable dejection. And this in all ordinary cases we may do, by entertaining right notions of the Divine goodness and mercy; judging with candour of ourselves as well as of others; cultivating habits of activity, cheerfulness, and social intercourse; improving our talents and faculties to the utmost of our power; and never engaging in enterprises above our strength, or in schemes that seem likely to expose us to the tyranny of unruly passion.

311. So

311. So much for Esteem and Contempt, and the passions allied to them. They are all different modifications of Love and Hatred; and all or most of them seem to arise from our considering things or persons as simply, and in themselves, good or evil. The next class of passions are those which arise in us when we consider objects as good or evil not only in themselves, but also with a peculiar reference to us. If a thing, or rather a person, seem fit to receive good from us, we regard it with that sort of love which is termed *Benevolence*; if fit to receive evil from us, our hatred to it we may call, till we get a more proper name, *Malevolence*: if a thing or a person give us pleasure, or seem fit to do us good, we regard it with *Complacency* or *Delight*; if fit to do us evil, or deprive us of pleasure, with *Displacency*, or, to use a more common word, with *Dislike*.

312. Benevolence and esteem, though often united, are not the same. A man is benevolent to his new-born infant, whom he cannot be said to esteem; and to a poor profligate, whom it may be impossible for him

him not to despise. Nor are malevolence and contempt the same, though they also go often together: our hatred of a powerful adversary, though blended with malevolence, may be without the least mixture of contempt; nay, if he have great abilities, may be consistent with admiration. Esteem and complacency must, in like manner, be distinguished; though frequently, as when we converse with a friend, they have one and the same person for their object: for we have complacency in, that is we receive pleasure from, things inanimate, as a house, a garden, a book, a picture, none of which is, properly speaking, the object of our esteem. Contempt and dislike must also be distinguished; for that which we do not despise may be fit to do us evil, as a highwayman, a serpent, a storm, &c.

313. As benevolence prompts us to promote, or at least to wish, the happiness of others, its object must be, not only a percipient being, but a being who is capable of deriving happiness or comfort from us: complacency, as already observed, may

M m

have

have for its object, not only percipient, but even inanimate beings. These two passions must therefore be yet further distinguished. Good men delight, or have complacency, nay may be said even to rejoice, in God : indeed the contemplation of his adorable nature yields the highest and most lasting felicity whereof rational minds are capable. But we cannot be said to be benevolent towards God ; because our goodness extends not to him, he being, in and of himself, eternally and infinitely happy. Further still : the object of our complacency must always be, or seem to be, agreeable ; but the object of our benevolence may be neither agreeable nor good ; it is enough if it have a capacity of being made so. A good man takes no delight in the wicked ; but he wishes them well, and endeavours, if he can, to reform them.

314. The passion that rises within us towards those percipient beings who seem fit to receive evil from us, I called *Malevolence*, as being, according to etymology at least, the opposite of Benevolence. But the term is not proper. An undutiful child may

may to the most affectionate parent seem a very proper object of correction; but it would be an abuse of words to say, that such a parent is malevolent towards his child. To a good magistrate malefactors may seem fit to receive, from the laws of their country, as administered by him, even capital punishment; but there is no malevolence in a good magistrate, nor is the law capable of it: and sanguinary laws are enacted from a principle, not of ill-will to individuals, but of love to the community. To be *indifferent* to the welfare of those who are fit to receive good from us, would manifest a savage disposition which might be considered as the opposite of benevolence; but *indifference* is not a passion. The *passions* that counteract this amiable affection, by disposing men to do no good, but positive evil to others, will be hereafter taken notice of, under the names of Resentment, Anger, Revenge, &c.

315. Dr Watts seems to think, that benevolence to our equals may be called *Friendship*, and to our inferiors *Mercy*. And it is true, that we are always the

M m 2

friends

friends of those towards whom we are benevolent ; and that in popular language a good man may be said to be *merciful* to his beast. But, in order to constitute what is commonly called Friendship, acquaintance, esteem, and complacency are necessary, as well as benevolence ; whereas we may, and indeed ought to exercise benevolence towards strangers, criminals, and even enemies ; that is, towards those in whom we take no delight and repose no trust, and with whom we have but a slight acquaintance, or none at all. And the object of, what is properly called Mercy, is a person liable to punishment : mercy is what we all pray for from God ; and it is mercy which a condemned malefactor implores from his sovereign. It may be added, with respect to friendship, that, though the proverb says it either finds men equal or makes them so, equality of condition, or of talents, is by no means essential to it. For a master and his servant, a peer and a commoner, a sovereign and his subject, an unlettered man and a philosopher, may be affectionate and faithful friends to each

each

each other: and if a man were to forsake his friends on being promoted to a rank above them, the world would censure his conduct as equally ungenerous and unnatural.

316. Benevolence towards the brute creation has, I think, no other name than *Humanity* or *Tenderheartedness*, nor needs any other; for he, who is cruel to his beast, would be so to his servant or neighbour, if he durst. Useful and inoffensive animals have a claim to our tenderness, and it is honourable to our nature to befriend them; by exposing them to no unnecessary hardship, making their lives as comfortable as we can, and, if we must destroy them, putting an end to their pain in an instant. But more of this hereafter.—Some people contract a *fondness* for certain animals, as horses and dogs, which are indeed furnished by nature with the means of recommending themselves to us in various ways; some, less excusably, for cats, parrots, monkeys, &c. When this sort of fondness becomes immoderate, it is something worse than folly, and seldom fails

fails to withdraw our affections from our brethren of mankind, as well as to reconcile us to habits of idleness and nastiness. Low company, of whatever kind, debases our nature in proportion as we become attached to it.

317. Fondness is founded in complacency. It partakes also of benevolence, but often counteracts it: as when it imprisons for life that playful, beautiful, and harmless creature, a singing bird; mangles the ears of a dog, or the tail of a horse; pampers a lapdog, so as to make him more helpless and useless than nature made him; and, which is infinitely more cruel, corrupts a child by indulgence and flattery. These are melancholy proofs of the weakness of human reason. But there is, in some of our best affections, a tenderness of love; which has also obtained the name of fondness, and which, so far from being an infirmity, may be justly accounted a virtue, being highly natural, amiable, and beneficial. Such is that fondness, which unites itself with the several forms of natural affection, whereby parents

rents and children, brothers and sisters, and other near relations, are mutually attached to, and delighted with, one another. These parental, conjugal, filial, and fraternal charities not only humanize the heart of man, and give a peculiar and exquisite relish to all the comforts of domestic life, but also cherish that elevating principle, a sense of honour, which heightens the gracefulness, and adds to the stability, even of virtue itself.

318. The passion opposite to complacency is *Displacency* or *Dislike*. It has for its object that which seems fit to do evil, or take away good; that, in a word, which is disagreeable; and, according to the degree of violence wherewith it operates, assumes different names, as *Disgust*, *Loathing*, *Abhorrence*, *Abomination*, *Detestation*. We *dislike* an ill-natured countenance; we are *disgusted* with the conversation of a vain-glorious fool; we *loathe* or *nauseate* food when we are sick; we *abhor* an unjust or ungenerous action; we *abominate* the impious rites of Pagan-superstition; we *detest* such characters as Tiberius, Herod, Caligula,

gula, Nero. By these examples I do not mean to ascertain the exact signification of the words ; which perhaps could not be easily done ; as people in the choice of such words may be determined by their present feelings, or merely by the habit of using one word more than another : but I give these examples, to show that the words above mentioned mean, not different passions, but rather different degrees of the same passion. Words expressive of very keen dislike ought not to be employed on ordinary occasions. In general, the frequent use of hyperbolical expressions, though some people affect them, is a sign of levity or intemperance of mind.

319. We are sometimes conscious of strong dislike which we can hardly account for, and which to others, and to ourselves too perhaps, may appear capricious or even ridiculous. This has been called *antipathy*. Most people feel it on seeing a crawling toad or serpent ; and such antipathy is useful and therefore reasonable, because it contributes to our safety : but whether it be owing to constitution

tion or to acquired habit, I cannot say ; as I know not whether a child, previously to advice or example, would be conscious of it. To certain kinds of food, as pork and cheese, some people have an antipathy ; which may be the effect of unpleasing associations ; or perhaps it may be constitutional ; for I have heard of those who would grow sick if cheese were in the room, though they did not see it. I know men both healthy and strong, who are uneasy when they touch velvet, or see another handling a piece of cork. And I remember that, in my younger years, if my hands happened to be cold, I could not, without uneasiness, handle paper, or hear it rustle, or even hear its name mentioned. What could give rise to this, I know not ; but I am sure there was no affectation in the case.

320. Of this *papyrophobia* I need not inform the reader that I was cured long ago. And I doubt not, that such unaccountable infirmities might be in many, perhaps in most, cases got the better of : which, when it can be done, ought not

N n

to

to be neglected; as every thing is a source of inconvenience, which gives one the appearance of singularity, or makes one unnecessarily dependent on outward circumstances. Persons, however, there are, who from an affectation of extreme delicacy are at pains to multiply their antipathies and other singularities; to the no small molestation of themselves as well as others. Such people will scream at the sight of a spider, a caterpillar, a mouse, or even a frog: and if, at table, you be conveying salt to your plate with a careless or trembling hand, will sweat with apprehension lest you let it fall, and so bring mischief, as they are willing to believe, upon one or other of the company. But this last example favours more of superstition than of false delicacy. All such fooleries are quite inconsistent with that manly simplicity of manners, which is so honourable to the rational character.

321. From the different forms of Love and Hatred, Complacency and Dislike, which I have been endeavouring to analyse, a third class of passions derive their origin,

origin, which vary in their feelings and names, according as their objects vary with respect to us. If that which seems fit to do us good be so far in our power that we may consider it as attainable, it excites *Desire*; if probably attainable, *Hope*; if actually obtained, *Joy*; and the person who helps us to obtain it is the object of our *Gratitude*. If that which seems fit to do us harm may possibly come upon us, it excites what may be called *Aversion*; if it may probably come upon us, *Fear*; if it be actually come upon us, *Sorrow* or *Grief*; and if any of our fellow-men has been instrumental in bringing it upon us, that person is the object of our *Anger*. On these pairs of opposite passions, *Desire* and *Aversion*, *Hope* and *Fear*, *Joy* and *Sorrow*, *Gratitude* and *Anger*, I shall make a few remarks, and so conclude this part of the subject.

322. *Desire* and *Aversion*. Things may seem *desirable*, in the popular sense of that epithet, which are not attainable: such is an affluent fortune, to those who are sure they can never have it; and such is health,

to him who knows that he is dying of a consumption. But in general, it is true of those things which draw forth the active passion of Desire, that they seem to be within the reach of the person who wishes to have them. Few people can be said to desire to fly, or to desire to be the governors of kingdoms; and to those who have aspired to crowns and sceptres the attainment of such things must have appeared at least possible. Desire is a restless passion; and if every sort of excellence, whether attainable or unattainable, were to raise it, there would be no end of disappointments, and human life would be completely wretched. This passion, as it arises from the view of something agreeable, is partly a pleasurable feeling; and it is also painful, and sometimes intensely so, because it implies a consciousness of our wanting something, without which we think we are not so happy as we should be if we had it.

323. Nothing more discomposes the mind than inordinate desire, or more effectually disqualifies it for prudent exertion,

tion. It is a torment in itself, and it exposes to disappointment; and the anguish of disappointment is in proportion to the violence of desire. And therefore it is of the utmost importance to our virtue and happiness, and indeed to our reputation as men of prudence, that we inure ourselves to habits of moderation in all our desires, in all those at least that are liable to become extravagant, that is, in all that regard this world. To effect this, we shall do well to meditate frequently on the shortness of life, the uncertainty of present things, and their insufficiency to yield those gratifications which are expected from them. If we are anxious to be wealthy, eminent, or great, let us attend to the fates and fortunes of those who have acquired renown, riches, or power, and consider how much happier they were than other men, what proportion of their happiness arose from such things, and whether a reasonable share of felicity might not be attained without them: continually bearing in mind, that, though happiness is not always in our power, contentment

contentment is; and that contentment is enough.

324. A slight degree of desire has been called *Propensity* or *Inclination*; when it becomes very importunate, it is termed *Longing*; and Longing may grow stronger and stronger, till it overwhelm the mind and destroy the body. This may happen, not only in regard to food and drink and other things necessary, but also when the object of desire may seem to many to be essential neither to life nor to happiness. Men have lived long and comfortably at a great distance from the place of their birth, the neighbourhood of which is surely no necessary of life: yet there have been men who sickened and died of an excessive longing to revisit their native land. To this malady the Swifs were formerly so subject, that they gave it a name signifying the disease of the country: the Scots too have suffered from it; and Homer makes Minerva say, of the wandering Ulysses, that, to enjoy the happiness of again seeing the smoke ascend from his native Ithaca, he would willingly die.

325. Some of our desires take different names according as their objects differ. To desire the good that others possess may be termed *Covetousness*; as in the tenth law of the Decalogue, where it is very emphatically prohibited: as in the New Testament it is not only prohibited, but branded with the name of Idolatry, and declared to be a sin that excludes from heaven. Desire of riches has also been called *Covetousness*. But this desire, if moderate, and if it pursue its object without injury to any person, cannot be called criminal; nay, if it engage in the pursuit in order to obtain the means of doing good, it is very commendable, and gives rise to industry, temperance, and other virtues equally beneficial to individuals and to society. Desire of the pleasures of sense is termed *Sensuality*; especially when it becomes habitual, and excludes or weakens the more generous principles of action: and then it is a disease of the most debasing nature, and reduces man to the condition of a beast. Temperance, a hardy way of life, and a superiority to the fascinations

nations of luxury, are by all moralists recommended, as friendly to our moral improvement, and highly honourable to man as a rational being.

326. The desire of honour and power has obtained the name of *Ambition*. It is very apt, as Cicero observes, to spring up in noble minds; and it may, if properly regulated, produce good; but when in any degree immoderate (as it seldom fails to be when it has been in any great degree successful) it is almost impossible to restrain it within the proper limits. Dreadful are the miseries which unbridled ambition has introduced into the world; as may be seen in the histories of all nations: history indeed contains little more than the acts of ambitious men and their consequences; and the very word *ambition* conveys to us some idea of evil. And yet the love of power, or a desire of superiority, is natural to man, and so far from being in itself censurable, that a total want of it is blamed or pitied as mean spiritedness. The only principles that can controul ambition, so as to render it at once innocent

innocent and beneficial, are benevolence and the love of justice ; principles so nearly allied, that the one cannot exist without the other. Cicero has some good remarks on this subject in the eighth chapter of his first book *De Officiis*.

327. To desire money for its own sake, and in order to hoard it up, is *Avarice* ; an unnatural passion, that disgraces and entirely debases the soul, from which it seldom fails to eradicate every generous principle and kind affection. It impairs the understanding also, and contracts the genius. To this vile passion Horace scruples not to ascribe the inferiority of the Roman literature to the Greek ; and Longinus imputes the decay of eloquence in his time to the same cause. Against avarice the ridicule of the Comic muse has been pointed, and the scourge of satire brandished, in every age ; and by no writer more successfully than by Horace. Indeed we should be tempted to think, that he recurs rather too frequently to this topic, if we did not recollect, that, in the decline of the republic, the Romans, and some of

O o

the

the most splendid characters among them too, were beyond measure addicted to the hoarding up of money.

328. Many vices bring their punishment along with them, and none more conspicuously than avarice. The more it is indulged, and the more it has been successful, the more miserable it makes the poor wretch that is enslaved to it; to whom, in our language, with an allusion no doubt to this circumstance, the appellation of *miser* has long been appropriated. Even when misers, at the close of life, have applied their accumulations to a charitable purpose, the erection of hospitals for example, they have not been able to rescue their memory from contempt and detestation. For the world knows well, that there is no liberality in giving away what one can no longer keep; no virtue in rearing monuments to one's own vanity; and neither good nature nor common honesty in robbing society of the benefits that arise from commercial intercourse and a free circulation of wealth, or in adopting a plan of life which one cannot

cannot persist in without hardening one's heart against the deserving and the poor.

329. The desire of having that which others also desire gives rise to *Rivalship*; and a desire to be equal or superior to others is *Emulation*. Between rival candidates for the same object there ought to be no enmity; and between those who are ambitious to equal or excel one another there ought to be no envy. Enmity and envy, in cases of this nature, are marks of a little mind. And nothing gives a more favourable opinion of a man's candour and temper, than to live on good terms with those whom he considers as his antagonists in the career of honour, or in the pursuit of that, which, if he obtain, his rivals must lose. We are to consider those as our enemies (says Tully, adopting a sentiment of Plato) who carry arms against us, not those who aspire to the same posts of honour which we wish to gain: imitating the moderation of Africanus and Metellus, between whom there was rivalry, but no bitterness.

330. Emulation, when without any mix-

O O 2

ture

ture of malice or envy, is a noble principle of action, and a powerful incitement to the acquisition of excellence. Prudent parents and teachers are at pains to cherish it in young persons, and find that, when properly directed, it has better effects than the fear of punishment or the hope of reward. There are writers, who, viewing human nature in an unfavourable light, have thought fit to affirm, that emulation cannot be without envy, and that therefore it is dangerous to encourage it in schools or families. But this is a mistake. These two passions differ as widely as candour differs from cunning, or a reasonable regard to ourselves from ill-will to our neighbour. Emulation wishes to raise itself without pulling others down, that is, without doing or wishing them any injury; and no principle of action is in itself more commendable, or more useful to others as an example to rouse them to honest industry: there is great generosity in such emulation; and the man who exerts himself in it is making continual advances in virtue, because he is every moment acquiring more

more and more the command of his own spirit.

331. *Envy* is the reverse of all this. The envious man wishes to be superior, not by raising himself, but, as already observed, by pulling others down; and their prosperity, nay even their genius and their virtue, are to him matter not of joy, but of anguish: which is part of the character we ascribe to the devil. The envious man sets an example of selfishness, rancour, pride, and almost every other perversity incident to a despicable mind. Envy is a proof, not only of malignity, but of incapacity also. Hence it is, that no man is willing to acknowledge himself liable to this detestable passion; for that would be to provoke and acquiesce in his own disgrace. One exception to this remark I have indeed met with, and one only. I formerly knew a person, who would own that he was envious, and that it tormented him to hear even his best friends praised, or to see them treated with any uncommon degree of complaisance. But this was not the only foolish singularity which that person

son affected in order to make himself remarkable.

332. The exertions of generous emulation are highly delightful; for they rouse the soul, they amuse it, and they improve it. But Horace well observes, that the most cruel tyrants have never devised a torment greater than envy. Surely, it must be of infinite importance that we guard against a passion so productive of folly, wickedness, and misery. And caution is the more necessary here, because emulation, though, as we have seen, entirely different from envy, is very apt, through the weakness of our nature, to degenerate into it. Let then the man, who thinks he is actuated by generous emulation only, and wishes to know whether there be any thing of envy in the case, examine his own heart, and ask himself, whether his friends, on becoming, though in an honourable way, his competitors, have less of his affection than they had before; whether he be gratified with hearing them depreciated; whether he would wish their merit less, that he might the more easily equal or excel them; and

and whether he would have a more sincere regard for them, if the world were to acknowledge him their superior. If his heart answer all or any of these questions in the affirmative, it is time to look out for a cure; for the symptoms of that vile distemper, envy, are but too apparent.

333. If that which seems fit to do us evil may possibly come upon us, it raises what may be called *Aversion*; a term which, in its etymology, implies *turning away from*: Dislike is a word of similar import, though perhaps not so emphatical. On Dislike, as opposed to Complacency, I made a remark or two already, and have little more to say about it. Aversion, or active dislike, exerts itself with more or less energy, according to the magnitude of the evil, or rather according as we seem to be more or less in danger from it. We dislike, nay we may detest, the character of a person who died two thousand years ago, Nero for example; but, because we have no reason to apprehend evil from it, I know not whether it would be strictly proper to say, that we have an aversion to Nero's character. Yet,
if

if I were desired to write the history of Nero, I might say with propriety that I have an aversion to the subject : for, tho' Nero himself can do me no harm, it might seriously hurt me to employ much time in thinking of matters so disagreeable. *Aversion*, in short, seems to point at some evil which may come upon us ; even as its opposite, *Desire*, has for its object a good that is not altogether beyond our reach.

334. *Hope and Fear*. These two passions are more restless and active than the preceding pair ; as they view good and evil in a nearer situation. If the absent good is not only possible to be attained, but also probably attainable, it quickens desire into Hope : if the absent evil not only may come upon us, but probably will, it changes simple aversion into Fear. In this country, whatever aversion we may have to a plague of locusts, we can hardly be said to *fear* it, because, if we may judge of the future by the past, there is no probability of our being exposed to such a visitation : and, in like manner, we cannot *hope* that our fields will yield a hundred times the grain

grain we sow in them; because, though such a thing may be possible elsewhere, we have no reason to think it ever happened here or will happen. The purchaser of a lottery-ticket wishes no doubt to gain the first prize; but he is a fool if he *hope* for it, the probabilities against him being so very great.

335. Things in our power cannot properly be called the objects of Hope and Fear. For if the good which we desire be within our reach, we possess ourselves of it, and so hope is extinguished; and of the evils, from which we have it in our power at any time to escape, it is our own fault if we be afraid. Yet in the possession of good there may be, and generally is, the fear of losing it, and the hope of preserving it; and, while we suffer evil, we may hope its removal, and fear its continuance. In fact, in every circumstance of life, Hope and Fear may be said to be present with us, as long at least as we are intelligent and active beings: for these passions are the great springs to action, and without them the mind would be in a state

P p

of

of *torpor* hardly consistent with rationality. Even in the hour of death, man's hopes and fears do not forsake him; the approbation of his own mind cherishes the most transporting hope of Divine favour; as an evil conscience would awaken fear so intensely tormenting that nothing short of hell could exceed it. These passions are in other respects beneficial. In prosperity we ought to fear, lest we should become high-minded; and in adversity hope is a good defence against trouble. Hope in adversity is favourable to happiness: fear in prosperity is friendly to virtue.

336. Hope with little or no fear has been called *Confidence*, or Security: a temper of mind, which it is unsafe to indulge, as it embitters disappointment, to which, in a world so changeable as this, we are always more or less liable. Sometimes, however, in cases of great difficulty and danger, this passion has animated men to extraordinary efforts, and proved successful where timidity, or even prudent circumspection, would have had nothing to expect but disaster. But these are cases which
in

in common life rarely occur. Even in war this sort of enthusiasm is at best but a desperate expedient : it may have gained victories, but it has also been productive of defeat. How much more respectable was Fabius Maximus in that caution which broke the power of Hannibal, than Pompey in that ostentatious confidence which preceded and partly occasioned his ignominious overthrow at Pharsalia !

337. Fear without any mixture of hope is *Despair* ; a passion, which it is misery to feel, and impiety to entertain. Despair implies inattention to the vicissitude of human affairs, which often, and sometimes rapidly, make a transition from adverse to prosperous ; and which, at any rate, are of so mixed a nature, that in the deepest gloom they are seldom without rays of comfort, and in the greatest brightness not entirely free from clouds of apprehension. It implies further, an audacious and most unwarrantable distrust of both the wisdom and the goodness of God ; who never chastises but in order to reform, and who, if it is not our own fault, will undoubtedly

P p 2

make

make present evil terminate in future good. A meek and humble spirit is not in danger from this hideous passion. Despair arises from pride and hardness of heart, is generally preceded by long perseverance in evil habits, and frequently ends in phrensy and self-destruction.

338. How much then is it our interest, as well as duty, to cultivate benevolence and piety, humility and cheerfulness, temperance and patience ! These are the sunshine of the mind ; and as effectually exclude the demons of despair, as the radiance of the morning drives the birds of night to their abodes of darkness. Little hope, with a great mixture of fear, is termed *Despondence* ; which, as it enervates the soul, ought to be avoided ; and may be, if we are moderate in our expectations and desires ; not hasty to engage in what is likely to be very interesting ; and always prepared to submit, without a murmur, to the will of Providence. Let hope be encouraged, but not to excess. When rational and moderate, it is an excellent auxiliary in surmounting the difficulties of life ;
when

when in any degree extravagant, it leads to folly and misery.

339. Fear should not rise higher than to make us attentive and cautious : when it gains an ascendancy in the mind, it becomes an insupportable tyranny, and renders life a burden. The object of fear is evil ; and to be exempt from fear, or at least not enslaved to it, gives dignity to our nature, and invigorates all our faculties. Yet there are evils which we ought to fear. Those that arise from ourselves, or which it is in our power to prevent, it would be madness to despise, and audacity not to guard against. External evils, which we cannot prevent, or could not avoid without a breach of duty, it is manly and honourable to bear with fortitude. Insensibility to danger is not fortitude, no more than the incapacity of feeling pain can be called patience ; and to expose ourselves unnecessarily to evil, is worse than folly, and very blameable presumption : it is commonly called fool-hardiness, that is, such a degree of hardiness or boldness as none but fools are capable of.

340. Courage

340. Courage and Fortitude, though confounded in common language, are however distinguishable. Courage may be a virtue or a vice, according to circumstances, fortitude is always a virtue: we speak of desperate courage, but not of desperate fortitude. A contempt or neglect of danger without regard to consequences may be called courage; and this some brutes have as well as we: in them it is the effect of natural instinct chiefly; in man it depends partly on habit, partly on strength of nerves, and partly on want of consideration. But fortitude is the virtue of a rational and considerate mind; it is indeed a virtue rather than a passion: and it is founded in a sense of honour and a regard to duty. There may be courage in fighting a duel, though that folly is more frequently the effect of cowardice; there may be courage in an act of piracy or robbery: but there can be no fortitude in perpetrating a crime. Fortitude implies a love of equity and of public good: for, as Plato and Cicero observe, courage exerted for a selfish purpose, or without

without a regard to justice, ought to be called audacity rather than fortitude.

341. This virtue takes different names, according as it acts in opposition to different sorts of evil : but some of those names are applied with considerable latitude. With respect to danger in general, Fortitude may be termed *Intrepidity* ; with respect to the dangers of war, *Valour* ; with respect to pain of body or distress of mind, *Patience* ; with respect to labour, *Activity* ; with respect to injury, *Forbearance* ; with respect to our condition in general, *Magnanimity*. Fear in war, or fear that hinders a man from doing what he ought to do, is *Cowardice* ; sudden fear without cause is *Panic* ; habitual fear is *Puillanimity* ; fear of the labour that one ought to undergo is *Laziness*. Fear with surprise is *Terror* ; and violent fear with extreme detestation is *Horror*. Those unaccountable fears too are called *Horrors*, which sometimes arise in the imagination in sleep, or in certain diseases, and produce trembling, sweating, shivering, and other nervous symptoms.

342. For-

342. Fortitude is very becoming in both sexes ; but courage is not so suitable to the female character : for in women, on ordinary occasions of danger, a certain degree of timidity is not unseemly, because it betokens gentleness of disposition. Yet from those of very high rank, from a queen or an empress, courage in emergencies of great public danger would be expected, and the want of it blamed : we should overlook the sex, and consider the duties of the station. In general however, masculine boldness in a woman is disagreeable ; the term *virago* conveys an offensive idea. The female warriors of antiquity, whether real or fabulous, Camilla, Thalestris, and the whole community of Amazons, were unamiable personages. But female courage exerted in defence of a child, a husband, or a near relation, would be true fortitude, and deserve the highest encomiums.

343. The motives to fortitude are many and powerful. This virtue tends greatly to the happiness of the individual, by giving composure and presence of mind, and

and keeping the other passions in due subordination. To public good it is essential; for, without it, the independence and liberty of nations would be impossible. It gives to a character that elevation, which poets, orators, and historians have in all ages vied with one another to celebrate. Nothing so effectually inspires it as rational piety: the fear of God is the best security against every other fear. A true estimate of human life; its shortness and uncertainty; the numberless evils and temptations to which by a long continuance in this world we must unavoidably be exposed; ought by no means to discourage, or to throw any gloom on our future prospects; but should teach us, that many things are more formidable than death; and that nothing is lost, but much gained, when, by the appointment of Providence, a well-spent life is brought to a conclusion.

344. Let it be considered, too, that pusillanimity and fearfulness can never avail us any thing. On the contrary, they debase our nature, poison all our comforts,

Q q

and

and make us despicable in the eyes of others; they darken our reason, disconcert our schemes, enfeeble our efforts, extinguish our hopes, and add tenfold poignancy to all the evils of life. In battle, the brave soldier is in less danger than the coward; in less danger even of death and wounds, because better prepared to defend himself; in far less danger of infelicity; and has before him the animating hope of victory and honour. So in life: the man of true fortitude is in less danger of disappointment than others are, because his understanding is clear, and his mind disencumbered; he is prepared to meet calamity without the fear of sinking under it; and he has before him the near prospect of another life, in which they who piously bear the evils of this will obtain a glorious reward.

345. When our minds are greatly moved with the apprehension of approaching, but not certain, evil, the emotion is called *Anxiety* or *Solicitude*, and generally gives more pain than the evil itself would give, if present and real. It is therefore very imprudent

imprudent to give way to this passion, which will certainly do us harm, and probably can do us no good. Our Saviour himself prohibits it. "Take no thought for to-morrow," that is (according to the sense in which the translators of the Bible and other writers of their time often used the word *thought*) be not anxious or very solicitous about to-morrow: "sufficient to the day is the evil thereof." There is great benignity in this as in all the other precepts of our Divine Lawgiver. Do not afflict yourselves with evil which is only imaginary, and perhaps may never be realized: it is enough that you have evils to bear when they are actually come upon you. Excessive anxiety long indulged becomes a disease worse than death. To guard against it, we have nothing to do but to obey this short command: Trust in God, and hope the best.

346. *Suspicion* is a painful passion, nearly allied both to fear and to anxiety, yet different from both. We may fear, and may be anxious, without being suspicious

of any body; because the evil we apprehend may be such as our fellow-creatures can neither prevent nor bring upon us. Such is the anxiety and the fear occasioned by the illness of a friend. But if we think the physician from interested motives unwilling to cure the disorder, suspicion arises in us with respect to him. This passion, therefore, seems to have for its object some person who we think is likely to prevent our attaining or possessing good, or to bring upon us some dreaded evil. Suspicion, like fear, may have its use on many occasions, when it serves merely to put us on our guard; but to be habitually inclined to it makes a man malevolent, timorous, and odious. How different is Christian charity, which "is not easily provoked, and "thinketh no evil!"

347. The word *Jealous* is sometimes used in a good sense; as when we say of a man, that he is jealous of his honour; which means that he is solicitously cautious against dishonour. "I am jealous
"over you with a godly jealousy," says
St

St Paul to the Corinthians ; that is, I am very vigilant to secure your spiritual welfare. In this acceptation, *jealous* is of similar import with *zealous*. *Jealousy*, taking the word in another sense, is the same nearly with *Suspicion* ; but is somewhat more limited in its use. The suspicion which one man may entertain of another's honesty or credit can hardly be called jealousy ; this term being more commonly used to denote suspicion in love : as when a husband suspects his wife's fidelity, or a wife her husband's. This is a tormenting and furious passion, and has driven even generous minds into deeds of the most fatal extravagance. Often has it formed the subject of tragedy ; but no other poet describes it so forcibly as Shakespeare in his Othello.

348. *Joy and Sorrow*. I mentioned these as a third pair of opposite passions derived from Love and Hatred. When the good we desired is actually obtained, our fear and hope, with respect to it, cease, and *joy* takes possession of the heart : when that evil which was the object of our aversion

version is really come upon us, the hopes and fears, to which it formerly gave rise, disappear, or are swallowed up, in *Sorrow*. But if there be danger of our losing the good we possess, or if there be a chance of our escape from the present evil, hope and fear will continue to unite themselves with joy in the one case, and with sorrow in the other. And, as all worldly enjoyment is uncertain, and unexpected deliverances from evil sometimes happen, a considerate mind, even when joy is predominant, will not be wholly exempt from fear; and in the deepest affliction a pious mind will not be without hope of deliverance, or at least of consolation. Joy and Sorrow belong properly to the mind, Pleasure and Pain to the body. There may be bodily pain without sorrow, as when a valiant foldier is wounded in gaining a victory for his country: there may be bodily pleasure where there is no joy, as in the case of a thirsty man drinking while he is in great anguish of mind: and every one knows, that there may be sorrow

sorrow without pain of body, and joy without any positive bodily pleasure.

349. Moderate joy, in Latin *Gaudium*, we may term *gladness*: the Stoics allowed it, as already observed, to be not unworthy of a wise man, although in general they affected to be very unfriendly to the passions. Great joy, in Latin *Letitia*, the same philosophers condemned. Exultation, or extravagant joy, is no doubt unseemly, at least on ordinary occasions; for it betrays such levity and want of consideration as, though excusable in a child, we should not easily pardon in a man, especially in one who has any dignity of character to support. The appearance of excessive joy in a king or commander, on occasion of a victory, would be unbecoming, and seem to foretel an equal degree of unmanly dejection in the event of a defeat.

350. I cannot however go so far as the Stoics did in blaming every sort of violent *discomposure*, whether expressive of happiness or of affliction; for I think, that the strongest emotions are neither ungrace-

ungraceful, nor likely to give offence, when they discover an exquisite degree of moral sensibility. A child after long absence springing to the embrace of a parent; a wife meeting her husband alive and well whom the moment before she believed to have perished by shipwreck; the man, who had been lame from his birth, entering the temple, on being miraculously cured by Peter, “walking and leaping, and “praising God;”—these, with a thousand other instances of agreeable surprise that might easily be imagined, would give delight to the beholder, however extravagantly the passion might express itself. And in surprises of an opposite nature, and equally violent, the most immoderate sorrow would hardly be censurable.

351. Different degrees of joy are signified by the words *Gladness*, *Mirth*, *Exultation*, *Rapture*, *Ecstasy*; and different degrees of sorrow by *Grief*, *Trouble*, *Anguish*, *Misery*. Mirth is accompanied with laughter, and exultation (as the name literally imports) with leaping and dancing. The joy that one feels on having overcome opposition

position has been called *Triumph*; but this word is frequently so used as to convey an idea of insult, which is quite unworthy of a generous mind. "Triumph not over thine enemy," says an old adage, "victory is sufficient." Nothing does less honour to the national character of the Roman people, than their triumphs. There might be policy in them; but policy that shocks humanity is not good. Rejoicing for victory may be allowed, and is natural, and indeed, by its influence in diffusing public spirit, beneficial. But to expose to public view noble and royal prisoners in chains, in order to show our power over them, is almost as barbarous, as to laugh at a fallen enemy writhing in the agonies of death.

352. Savages are addicted to this sort of cruelty; and the Romans cannot be said to have emerged from the savage state, when this barbarous exhibition was first introduced among them by Romulus. Its continuance after they became civilized we may partly impute to fashion; which frequently betrays poor mortals into strange

R r

incon-

inconsistencies of conduct and sentiment. In their better days the Romans were neither ill-natured nor ungenerous : yet, if we knew no more of their story than what relates to their triumphs and gladiators, we must have thought them brutal and bloody barbarians.

353. When gladness, or moderate joy, settles into a habit, or continues for a considerable time, it is called *Chearfulness* : and habitual sorrow is termed *Dejection*, *Heaviness*, *Melancholy*. Cheerfulness is far preferable to mirth : the former is a habit, the latter a temporary act. Mirth is not always friendly to virtue, and, when too frequently indulged, betrays an intemperate mind not a little tinctured with folly : cheerfulness is a great support as well as ornament to every virtue, and is consistent with dignity, and even with sanctity, of character. Our mirth is liable to be succeeded by dejection : our cheerfulness dispels melancholy both from ourselves and from others. A merry companion is often teizing, and sometimes intolerable : a cheerful friend is always welcome, and
one

one of the greatest comforts of life. Mirth, says Addison, is like a flash of lightning that breaks through a gloom of clouds, and glitters for a moment: cheerfulness keeps up a kind of sunshine in the soul, and fills it with a steady and perpetual serenity. A cheerful man is master of himself, and enjoys a sound judgement and untroubled imagination: mirth to a considerate mind soon becomes oppressive, and for a time discomposes all its faculties.

354. There are persons who, from bodily infirmity or a deficiency of animal spirits, cannot for any length of time be cheerful; but if their mind be suited to their condition, and their desires proportioned to what they possess, they have *contentment*; and that, when founded in a firm persuasion of the goodness and wisdom of Providence, creates a heaven upon earth. I know not whether contentment and cheerfulness ought not to be called virtues rather than passions, as they are not, when moderate, as the former always is, accompanied with bodily commotion. Yet in the countenance they display themselves

R r 2

selves very significantly: and he must be a superficial observer indeed, who cannot distinguish gay from gloomy features, and the placid smile of contentment from the furlly look of dissatisfaction. They who wish to be contented and chearful must cultivate habits of benevolence, humility, and rational piety. Pride, malice, and superstition disfigure the face with frowns, and harass the soul with endless vexation.

355. When we rejoice on account of the joy of others, or grieve because they are in trouble, it may be called *Sympathetic Joy* or *Sorrow*. The remarks formerly made on it need not be repeated. Joy, when softened by tender passions, as conjugal love, natural affection, gratitude, and the like, does sometimes express itself by two symptoms, which one would think inconsistent, a smiling countenance and eyes full of tears. Homer ascribes them to Andromache on a particular occasion, *δακρυοει γελασασα*, when her husband Hector, going out to battle, puts his child in her arms, after having held him in his own, and solemnly invoked the blessing of heaven upon
on

on him. A face with this expression is one of the most interesting objects in nature. Painters have endeavoured to do justice to Homer's idea: indeed there cannot be a finer subject for painting. Many other emotions allied to joy are apt to express themselves in the same way; especially in those who have weak nerves or very delicate minds. There are persons, who cannot without tears read sublime verses, or hear or speak of any extraordinary instance of generosity. The sensations that accompany such weeping are, if I may so speak, painful from excess of pleasure.

356. The satisfaction one feels in the approbation of one's own conscience may be called *Moral joy*; and is of all human feelings the most delightful and permanent. An approving conscience is a counterbalance to all the evils of life, and supplies even in the hour of death the sweetest consolation. Without it there can be no happiness, and with it there can be no misery. As, on the other hand, *Moral Sorrow*, in all its forms of Remorse, Regret, and Self-condemnation, unless alleviated by those hopes

hopes of pardon which the truly penitent are permitted and encouraged to entertain, is alone sufficient, even in the greatest worldly prosperity, to make life a burden. "The spirit of a man will sustain his infirmity," that is, may support the natural evils that flesh is heir to; "but a wounded spirit who can bear!" A condemning conscience has often driven men to distraction; and sometimes made them confess crimes, which it was in their power to conceal, and which they knew would, when confessed, bring upon them capital punishment.

357. *Shame* is a passion which always accompanies moral sorrow. Some persons are indeed incapable of shame; but those, it is to be hoped, are few: for to say of a man, that he is impudent, or has lost the sense of shame, is a most severe censure, and seems to imply, that he has no conscience, no fear of God, and no regard to man. The word *shame* has several significations, and is applied to several passions, similar perhaps in their nature, but not the same. Consciousness of reputation lost, or
in

in danger of being lost, causes one sort of shame, which is also called *Confusion of face*, and discovers itself by blushing, downcast eyes, and abject behaviour. We feel in some degree the same passion, when any thing dishonourable is unjustly charged upon us: only in this case our knowledge of our own innocence supports the mind, and yields great consolation; and the shame that may then remain proceeds from our apprehension that others, whose opinion we revere, may think hardly of us, from not having the means of being better informed.

358. Upon the bare mention of any thing indecent, though not imputed to any body, a person of delicacy is conscious of a passion or feeling, which has also been called shame, and discovers itself by the same symptom of blushing. This, as a sign of an uncorrupted mind, is a very amiable affection, and particularly becoming in young people; as the rudeness or impudence of those who give occasion to it is detestable. Profane talkers, lewd jesters, and they who by speech or writing
present

present to the ear or to the eye of modesty any of the indecencies I allude to, are pests of society. Against the thief and the highwayman, we may, with the assistance of law, guard so as to be in no great danger from them; but a shameless profligate, by scrawling his execrable trash on the walls or windows of an inn, may to the young and harmless do lasting mischief, which it is impossible to punish, and which therefore the law cannot prevent. In this respect there is not, I have been told, any other country so infamous as our own. It is some comfort however to reflect that none but the vilest of the people are capable of this enormity. Those specimens of it that I have had the misfortune to see, appear, from the spelling and other circumstances, to have been the work of wretches who were equally destitute of sense, delicacy, and literature.

359. There is another sort of shame, commonly called *Bashfulness*, which often gives great pain to the young and unexperienced, when they appear before strangers, or in the presence of their superiors,
or

or have occasion to speak or act in public. When this *evil shame* (as the French call it) is excessive, so as to make people act absurdly, or disqualify them for doing their duty, it is very inconvenient as well as awkward, and pains should be taken to get the better of it; not all at once, however, nor in haste; for thus they might be driven into the opposite and much worse extreme of Impudence; but by little and little. Young persons of great sensibility are apt to be too much discouraged in the consciousness of this infirmity: but they have no occasion to be so. For, if they are attentive and respectful to their company, bashfulness will not injure them in the opinion of the discerning; it will rather raise prepossessions in their favour.

360. Even when the season of youth is past, a slight degree of bashfulness is not at all ungraceful on particular occasions, especially in those public speakers who wish to gain upon their audience by the gentle arts of persuasion; because it betokens humility and respect. Homer, who discriminates human characters with the greatest

S f

accuracy,

accuracy, tells us, that this was one of the peculiarities that distinguished Ulysses as an orator; and the poet adds, that his eloquence was irresistible. Ovid attended to this circumstance; as appears from his account of the contest between Ajax and Ulysses for the arms of Achilles. Ajax, who by the by lost his cause, begins with exclamation and blustering, suitable to his character; but nothing can be more modest or delicate than the attitude and exordium of Ulysses *. I mention this, because, in the hope that some of those who hear me may in time become public speakers, I would caution them against that air of confidence and self-sufficiency, which I have seen some preachers assume, and which is very offensive to a hearer of discernment and delicacy. I may add that, as humility is one of the distinguishing virtues of a Christian, a gentle, unassuming, and modest deportment, especially in public, is indispensable in a clergyman. Among senators in debate a more vehement

* See Ovid. *Metam.* xiii. 124.

animation

animation takes place, and may sometimes be proper; yet the modest speaker never fails to interest the audience in his favour.

361. *Anger and Gratitude.* These are the last pair of opposite passions which I mentioned as derived from Hatred and Love. The person, who is instrumental in bringing evil upon us or otherwise offending us, raises our *Anger*; which, Locke says, implies a present purpose of revenge, as well as a sense of injury. Revenge and anger do indeed too often go together; but surely there may be anger, as in an affectionate parent towards his child, without any purpose of revenge. The chastisement that may follow such anger is not vindictive; it aims at nothing but the good of the child; and to the good parent, whom duty compels to administer so harsh a remedy, it gives pain instead of pleasure. — The person who is instrumental in doing us good, is the object of our *Gratitude*; which is a very pleasing emotion: as anger is so much the reverse, that we often call it *Displeasure*. Some people are so prone to anger, that one would almost think they

S f 2

delighted

delighted in it. But if this is really the case, there must be something unnatural in the disposition of their minds.

362. Every thing that hurts us is not the object of anger. We are not angry at the stone which, falling by accident from the top of a house, gives us a wound: but if we believed that a man occasioned its fall, we should be angry, either at his malice if he did it on purpose, or at his negligence if he took no pains to prevent it. A sudden fit of instinctive anger may indeed break out against an inanimate thing; as when we say bitter words to the bench that bruises our shin in the dark: but such anger is not rational; we immediately become ashamed of it; and were it to continue, it would make us ridiculous. An irrational animal, a horse that kicks, or a dog that without provocation bites us, may raise our anger, because we have some notion, though perhaps not well founded, that he might and ought to have let us alone; and the punishment we apply in such cases is neither blamed nor ridiculed; because the provocation was great; and

and because our blows may be effectual, by frightening the animal, in preventing such evil for the future.

363. Anger is generally made up of dislike and some degree of ill-will; but of such ill-will as does not always imply malevolence. Parents, as already observed, may be angry with those children whom they fondly love; and that anger is not only consistent with benevolence, but is even a proof of it. For if a parent were not angry when his child is guilty of transgression, we should say that he does not love his child so much as he ought to do. In like manner, we may be angry with a friend or neighbour; that is, we may be offended at some injury he has done us, and wish something to happen to make him sensible of his fault, and prevent his doing the like for the future: and all the while we may be, and indeed ought to be, far from wishing him any real or lasting evil, but, on the contrary, ready to forgive him, desirous of reconciliation, and inclined to do him a favour when it is in our power.

364. Anger

364. Anger is called by Horace a short madness. When in any degree violent, it is truly so; for it deprives a man for a time of the use of his reason, occasions absurd and immoral conduct, and if long continued may terminate in real phrenzy. Anger that is both lasting and violent is termed *Rancour* or *Malignity*, a passion which makes a man miserable and detestable. When anger is apt to rise on every trifling occasion, it is called *Peevishness*; and renders one a torment to one's self, and a plague to others. Anger that breaks forth with violence, but is soon over, is termed *Passionateness*; which, though not inconsistent either with good nature or with generosity, ought to be restrained, because it is extremely inconvenient to friends and dependents, and may hurry a man on to the perpetration of crimes. Anger that is cool, silent, and vindictive, is a much worse passion: it is indeed so bad, that nothing good is to be expected from him who is capable of it.

365. Anger was implanted in our constitution for many valuable purposes, particularly

ticularly for self-defence. Had we nothing irascible in us, there would be no end of injuries and indignities; but our knowledge of the nature and effects of anger makes us unwilling to provoke it: and thus men stand in awe of one another, which greatly contributes to the peace of society. If an injury be accompanied with circumstances of peculiar baseness or meanness, our anger is termed *Indignation*. When anger exceeds the bounds of self-defence, and contrives to bring real harm upon others, without any view to their good or to that of the community, it becomes *Revenge*, or *Vengeance*; which, if generally practised, would introduce endless confusion.

366. For we are apt to think the injury we have just now received greater than it really is; and therefore, if we were to retaliate immediately by word or deed, we should hardly fail to go beyond the due bounds, and so become injurious in our turn; which would call for new revenge from the opposite party; and that, being no doubt equally outrageous, would
provoke

provoke to further vengeance, so that the evil would be incurable. Accordingly, revenge is forbidden by the laws both of God and of man. Savages, who enjoy not the protection of law, are their own avengers: whence they become addicted to this dreadful passion; and their vengeance is always excessive. One is not a competent judge in one's own cause. And therefore, in regular society, persons of impartiality and considerable learning are appointed judges, to punish according to the exact amount of the transgression, and give the injured party reasonable redress and no more.

367. When civilized nations go to war, or individuals go to law with one another, the principle of their conduct ought to be, not revenge, but a regard to public good; which, in order to discourage injury and defend our violated or endangered rights, compels us to have recourse to violent measures, that are justifiable only from the necessity of the case. To go to law to plague a neighbour, or in order to obtain reparation for a petty trespass that does
neither

neither us nor the public any material injury, has in it more of malice than of love to justice. In war, to kill unnecessarily, or with a view to gratify private malevolence, is nothing less than murder; and is indeed discountenanced by the opinions and practice of all enlightened nations. While the enemy attacks or resists, it is lawful because necessary, to repel force by force; when he submits, he is intitled to mercy, and even to the generosity of the conqueror. "Cowards are cruel, but the brave Love mercy, and delight to save."

368. There are many occasions, on which anger is not to be blamed; there are many, on which it is praiseworthy. The Scripture intimates, that we may be angry without sin: nay, our Saviour himself once looked round with anger on the Jews, "being grieved for the hardness of their hearts." Aristotle has very perspicuously, though with great brevity, marked the boundaries within which this passion may innocently operate, and so as to deserve praise, instead of blame. ο' μὲν

ἐν ἐφ' οἷς δεῖ, καὶ οἷς δεῖ ὀργιζόμενος, ἔτι καὶ ὡς δεῖ, καὶ ὅτε, καὶ

T t

ὁρατ

δορ χρεον, ικανειται *. He who is angry, only on such occasions as he ought, and with such persons as he ought, and in such manner, and at such time, and for such length of time, as he ought, is actuated by a laudable anger. I shall make a few remarks on the several parts of this aphorism.

369. First, Anger is laudable, when the *occasion* is such as renders it in some degree our duty: and that happens, when not to be angry would discover on our part a want of moral sensibility, or might prove an encouragement to wickedness in others. Parents overlooking a child's transgression, or being equally indulgent to him when he is, and when he is not, in a fault, would show a very blameable indifference: they could hardly take a more effectual way to corrupt his mind. A woman listening, without extreme indignation, to a licentious proposal from a man, would undoubtedly give him reason to think that she did not disapprove of it.

* Ethic. ad Nic. iv. 5.

To speak without emotion of any shocking instance of cruelty, ingratitude, injustice, blasphemy, or any other impiety, would make us suspect the speaker, not only of insensibility, but of a total want of principle. In cases of this nature, anger under certain limitations is a virtue, and the want of it a vice.

370. With respect to indignities offered to ourselves, though we ought always to exercise forbearance, and be ready to forgive;—yet if, on receiving a very gross and public insult, we were to show no resentment, the world would blame our meanness of spirit, and think us not very fit to be entrusted with the important concerns of another, when we showed so little attention to our own. Peculiar circumstances, however, and the dignity of certain characters, might make great alteration in a matter of this kind. When, at the trial of Charles I. one of the bystanders spat in the king's face, and he, without speaking or even looking at the traitor, calmly wiped his cheek with a handkerchief, he manifested a greatness of

T t 2

foul

soul that had in it something more than heroic, and almost more than human. But what words can express our detestation of the ruffian who could perpetrate such a deed !

371. Anger is laudable, secondly, when a man is angry with *such persons* as he ought. The persons with whom we may reasonably be angry have been, most of them, specified already. Those towards whom we ought to exercise particular lenity and forbearance, are, first, Our benefactors and friends, who may happen, in an unguarded moment, through the weakness of human nature, to give us offence. Secondly, Men eminently good, or whom we know to be good. Great reverence is due to good men ; and if we only hint to them, in the gentlest terms, that they have without design done us injury, it will wound them as deeply as they ought to be wounded ; they will readily make acknowledgements ; and further reproach from us would be cruel. Thirdly, They who are liable to be too much disheartened by our anger, as dependents,

pendents, affectionate children, persons in adversity, or of delicate health and spirits, or weak in understanding, are all intitled to peculiar tenderness; being all objects of pity, and not likely to offend, except through inadvertence. And fourthly, Those whom our anger would probably irritate, or to whom it could not do any good, we ought to bear with, or let alone, for our own sakes, as well as for theirs *.

372. I need not add, that to be angry with our Creator is of all passions the most shocking, unnatural, and inexcusable; infomuch that you may perhaps think the human heart, bad as it is, incapable of such impiety. But are not they guilty of it, who repine at Providence, either for bringing on them adversity which they may fancy they do not deserve, or for making their neighbour prosperous beyond what they may think him intitled to? All such murmurings, envyings, and discontents, however common, and however disguised, are so many instances of

* See Archbishop Secker's Sermons, vol. 5.

anger,

anger, if not of hatred, towards both God and man. This ought to be seriously considered. Contentment with our lot, joy in our neighbour's prosperity, and resignation to the Divine Will, diffuse ineffable tranquillity over the soul, prevent the intrusion of anger and every other painful passion, keep us at peace with all the world, and make us rejoice in God and in all his dispensations.

373. Thirdly, Anger is laudable, when the *manner* of it is consistent with propriety and duty. It appears from what has been said, that our anger may be in too slight a degree; as when it sets before others an example of blameable indifference, or tends to repress, and consequently to weaken, our moral sensibility. But excess of anger is the more common and more dangerous extreme. And it is hardly possible, and perhaps would not be expedient, to fix the boundary to which anger, consistently with innocence, may go. If this were ascertained, and people taught that they might safely proceed so far, they would think they might proceed a little
and

and a little further, till at last they might lose all remembrance of the boundary. For he who ventures to the utmost verge of innocence seldom fails to go beyond it; there is criminal presumption in venturing so far. Two rules, however, may be given on this head: the first, that our anger should never make us lose the government of ourselves; the second, that it should never do injury to others.

374. Anger, thus moderated, will not produce in us any commotion so violent as to hurt our health, or our character as men of prudence; nor will it break out in boisterous or insulting language, far less in that impious and barbarous practice of cursing and swearing. To whatever degree we may be irritated, we shall do well neither to speak nor to act, while our agitation is such as to prevent calm reflection. It is said of Socrates, that, when greatly provoked, he became instantly silent; and I suppose he never had occasion to repent of his silence. And I have heard it recommended as a good rule, that, before a man give way to his passion, he should

should take time to do something else that is not connected with it, and if possible retire for a moment, if it were only to recollect some passage of a favourite author, or even to repeat the letters of the alphabet. A little delay may do good, and forbearance and mildness can never do harm.

375. Fourthly, Anger is laudable, when it is *well-timed*. Now it is not well-timed, when it interferes with the performance of any important duty : to pray, or go to church, in anger, would be very indecent. Nor is anger well-timed, when we have not had the means of knowing, whether any real offence has been given, or what is the true amount of the offence : mistakes of this nature are not uncommon ; men are often offended without cause, and generally more than they ought to be. Anger is also unseasonable, when it is likely to give pain or show disrespect to our company ; or when it is directed against a man whose present temper of mind makes him, from an excess of levity, or from any other intemperance, deaf to reason, or in a condition of being easily exasperated.

perated. Such infirmities we all have ; and, as we all wish allowances to be made for them in ourselves, we all ought to make the like allowances in favour of others.

376. Fifthly, Anger is not blamed when it *continues no longer* than is reasonable. Lasting resentment is inexcusable, whatever the provocation may have been. It sours the temper, and so makes a man unfit for society, and unhappy in himself ; it excludes from his mind benevolent and pious thoughts ; it cherishes pride, envy, contempt, and other violent and gloomy perturbations. " Let not the sun go down on your wrath," is an excellent rule : but, for the most part, anger is censurable if it last an hour, or even a much shorter space. The moment the offender owns his fault, or seems desirous of reconciliation, our anger ought to be lost in forgiveness. Though he should not own his fault, nor give reason to believe that there is any change in his mind for the better, we shall do well to check our anger ; or, if it be prudent to keep up an appearance

U u

of

of it, to take care that it be an appearance only : for, because he is injurious, it does not follow that we ought to make ourselves unhappy ; which we shall certainly do, if we suffer this tormenting passion to take and to keep possession of us.

377. Let those who are prone to anger abstain at least from every outward expression of it, from reproachful words and vindictive deeds, and conceal it carefully within their own breast. In this way they may in time get the command of it ; for most passions thus restrained become weaker. Let them resolve that they will abstain from anger for a day, for two days, for a week, for a month ; and, if they adhere to the resolution, they will soon congratulate themselves on the happy consequences. Let them, as much as possible, keep aloof from vexatious business, and from quarrelsome and litigious men ; and avoid not only those altercations which may lead to anger, but disputes in general, and all that sort of reading which is termed controversial. Let them never for a moment imagine, as passionate men are apt

apt to do, that their anger is incurable. They can manage it sometimes for the sake of interest: let them learn to manage it for God's sake, and for the sake of their fellow-creatures and themselves.

378. *Gratitude* was mentioned as the passion that seems to stand in opposition to Anger. We naturally love a man, because he is of the same condition with ourselves; we have good-will towards him, because he stands in need of our aid, and may be profited by it; we love him yet more, if we know him to be of a mild disposition, and more still when he proves himself a friend to mankind by acts of beneficence: but if we ourselves are the objects of that beneficence, our good-will towards him, and our delight in him, ought to be very strong. When we thus contemplate our benefactor, not only with sentiments of complacency and benevolence, but also with a disposition to requite his favours, this mixture of pleasurable emotions is termed *Gratitude*. The reverse is *ingratitude*; which, if it cannot be called a passion, because it occasions little com-

U u 2

motion

motion in the corporeal part of our nature, is however a vice of such enormity, that the most profligate man would be ashamed to acknowledge himself guilty of it.

379. *Si ingratum dixeris, omnia dixeris*, says the Latin maxim : if you call a man ungrateful, you have called him every thing that is base ; you need say nothing more. The ungrateful man is an enemy to the human race ; for his conduct tends to discourage beneficence : and he is unfit for society and unworthy of it, because his indifference or hatred towards his benefactor proves him to be hard-hearted and unjust. There are two forms of this vile disposition ; one, when a man neglects to requite a favour when the requital is in his power ; the other, when he returns evil for good. The last is no doubt the worst ; but both are so bad that they are called by the same name ; it being difficult to find in language an epithet of more reproachful import than *ungrateful*. Gratitude is a gentle affection, and makes no great commotion in the animal economy ;
yet

yet is an active principle, and often displays itself visibly in the countenance by raising the complexion, brightening the eyes, and sometimes filling them with tears. An eye that weeps with gratitude has a particular splendor and earnestness in the expression.

380. Gratitude towards things irrational, or even inanimate, (if the term *gratitude* may be used in such a connection), is not the object of censure or ridicule; for every emotion that *resembles* this amiable virtue betokens a goodness of nature, which the passions allied to anger frequently do not. The plank that brought the mariner on shore from a shipwreck we should not blame him for taking particular care of, refusing to part with for any pecuniary consideration, and even sheltering from the injuries of the weather: we might smile at the circumstance; but it would be a smile, not of scorn, but of kindness. Dogs and horses have been instrumental in saving mens lives. Particular good-will towards such a dog, or such a horse, would be laudable; and to shoot the one for running

ning down a sheep, or to harass with toil the old age of the other, would be cruel, and without any violent figure of speech might even be termed ingratitude. However, what is properly, and without a figure, called Gratitude (and the same thing is true of Anger) has for its object a being that acts, or seems to act, with some degree of intention. We are grateful, not to the medicine, but to the physician, that cures us; and angry, not at the knife which wounds, but with the person who intentionally or negligently wielded it. Gratitude is due to every benefactor, and ought to be ardent in proportion to the magnitude of the favour, and the benevolence of those who confer it. Persons of small ability confer great favours, when what they do proceeds from a high degree of good-will: by him, who saw the generosity of the giver, the widow's mite was accounted a great sum.

381. To the Supreme Being, who freely gives us life and every other good thing, our highest gratitude is due; and should be continually offered up in silent thanksgiving,

giving, and often expressed in words, that it may have the more powerful effect on our own minds, and on those whose devotion we wish to direct, or to animate. Parents are in the next degree our benefactors, at least in ordinary cases : for to an attentive and affectionate parent, who must have done so much for us when we could do nothing for ourselves, and watched so long and so anxiously, and so frequently and fervently prayed, for our welfare, we are more indebted than to any other fellow-creature. A stranger who relieves us, though he never saw us before and may never see us again, is also intitled to peculiar acknowledgements of gratitude, on account of the disinterestedness of his virtue. But we must not think ourselves exempted from the obligation of this great duty, even when our benefactor is a person on whom we may have conferred many favours. A parent ought with thankfulness to receive what a dutiful child offers for his relief. " This is nothing more than I was well intitled to," would be an improper speech on such an occasion. It would intimate,

timate, that the parent, in taking care of his child, had been actuated, as much at least by the hope of recompense, as by natural affection, and a sense of duty.

S E C T. VI.

The Subject continued.

Passions and Affections.

382. I Have now given a brief account of some of our more remarkable passions, but have not gone thro' the subject, and could easily have proceeded further, if there had been time for it. Hints have been occasionally thrown in, with respect to the government of particular passions: I subjoin some brief remarks of a more general nature.—The government of the passions is a difficult work; but absolutely necessary, if we wish to be happy either in the next world, or in this. And as it is the more difficult the longer it is delayed, it is the part of prudence, as well as matter of

of duty, to begin it without delay. The difficulty of this duty may appear from the concurring testimony of wise men in every age; from the earnestness with which all moralists, particularly the inspired writers, recommend it; from what we may feel in ourselves of the unmanageableness of our passions, especially of those to which we are most inclined by nature or by habit; and from what we must have observed in the world around us, where we see men, of good understanding in other respects, enslaved to criminal inclinations, and led on to ruin, with their eyes open, by the strength of prevailing appetites.

383. Temperance, and an active life, are of the greatest benefit in preserving the health of both the body and the mind; and in giving us at all times the command of our thoughts, and consequently of our passions. Savages are much addicted to intemperance and idleness; and their passions are proportionably outrageous. As the passions depend in a great measure upon the imagination, whatever tends to regulate that faculty tends also to make them

X x

regular.

regular. And imagination is kept regular by cultivating habits of industry and soberness, piety and humility, and by cherishing the love of nature, simplicity, and truth. The passions also depend in part on the bodily constitution, and in some men are naturally stronger than in others. But every man may govern his passions, if he will take the necessary pains. The more the body is pampered, the greater strength will every evil passion acquire : and therefore a hardy, as well as busy life, tends to keep them manageable. Intemperance puts us off our guard, and disqualifies us for that strict self-government, which is at all times incumbent on us as moral and accountable beings. A very slight degree of it has this effect.

384. The regulation of the passions ought to begin as early in life as possible. Then indeed they are strong, but then the mind is docile, and has not contracted many evil habits. They, therefore, who have the care of children should be very attentive to their passions and opinions, as soon as these begin to appear ; rectifying the latter

latter if erroneous, and of the former repressing such as seem to partake of malice, pride, vanity, envy, or suspicion. The benevolent and pious affections cannot be indulged too much; and joy, hope, and fear, are useful when moderate, and properly directed. As a restraint on the passions of childhood, a sense of honour and shame, if cherished from the beginning, will be found to have better effects than bodily punishment; which ought never to be had recourse to, till all other means have been tried and found ineffectual. But nothing in a teacher or parent has more salutary consequences, than to set a good example, of candour, moderation, good-nature, humanity, and modesty. "Let no visible or audible impurity," says Juvenal, "enter the apartment of a child; for to children the greatest reverence is due." See his fourteenth satire; in which are many excellent remarks to the same purpose. It is pity that author was in this respect so very inattentive to his own precepts.

385. Let no evil passion impose on us by assuming a false name; for this often

X x 2

happens,

happens, and is often fatal to virtue. Men are apt to mistake their own avarice for frugality, profusion for generosity, suspicion for cautious discernment, pride for magnanimity, ostentation for liberality, detraction for the love of truth, insolence for plain-dealing, revenge for resentment, envy for emulation, and sensuality for necessary amusement. We must carefully guard against these and the like errors, by studying our own character with impartiality, and attending to what is said of us, not only by our friends, but also by our enemies, and by the world in general. For though our faults and infirmities are sometimes magnified by malicious misrepresentation, it does not often happen, that a man is universally blamed for a fault from which he is altogether free.

386. Even from lawful gratifications we should accustom ourselves frequently to abstain; for we ought always to have our passions and appetites in our power, remembering that the present is a life of trial, and was never intended for a state of complete happiness. Nor will this abstinence

hence take away from our sum of worldly enjoyment; on the contrary, it will add to it. As temperance, and even fasting sometimes, may not only contribute to health, but also by quickening appetite increase the pleasure of eating and drinking, so it is with our other appetites. Continual indulgence makes them unruly, and less sensible to pleasure; abstinence quickens them, and keeps them manageable.

387. Restrain needless curiosity; nor inquire into that business or those sentiments of other men in which you have no concern; nor puzzle yourselves with intricate and unprofitable speculation. There is in some people a restless and captious spirit, which is perpetually finding fault, and proposing schemes, and contriving arguments for the support of paradox, and meddling with matters that are not within their sphere. Hence arise anxiety, vexation, disappointment, misanthropy, scepticism, and many passions both unruly and unnatural, which we may easily avoid, if we take the apostle's advice, and "study
" to

“ to be quiet, and to mind our own business.”

388. Avoid all companies, all books, and all opportunities of action, by which you may have reason to apprehend that irregular passions may be raised or encouraged. How much good manners may be corrupted by evil communication, the sad experience of every age, I had almost said of every man, can abundantly testify. The world judges of men from the company they keep; and it is right that it should be so. No man will choose for his companion the person whom he either despises or disapproves. He therefore who associates with the wicked and the foolish gives proof of his own wickedness and folly. We may be the better, as long as we live, for having conversed one hour with a wise and good man; and the same time spent with those of an opposite character may give our virtue an incurable wound.

389. Consider all those books as dangerous, by which criminal passions may be inflamed, or good principles subverted; and I again warn you to avoid them as
you

you would the pestilence. To take pleasure in such things is a mark of as great corruption of mind, and ought to be accounted as dishonourable, as to keep company with pickpockets, gamblers, and atheists. Study the evidence of your religion, so as to be able to give a reason to those who may have a right to question you concerning your faith; and steadily, though calmly, defend your principles, if you should have the misfortune to fall into the company of those who controvert them: but do not rashly engage in this sort of altercation; nor choose for your friend or companion the man who takes pleasure in the books of infidelity. Such a man you will hardly convert by reasoning, as his unbelief is founded not in reason but in prejudice; and you need not expect to receive from him much useful information in these matters, as you will find, (at least I have always found), that he has attended to one side only of the question.

390. Games of chance, where money is the object, are dangerous in the extreme.

They

They cherish evil passions without number ; as avarice, anger, selfishness, discontent ; and give rise to altercation and quarrelling, and sometimes, as I am well informed, to the most shocking impiety : they occasion, as long as they continue, a total loss of time and of all the *rational* pleasures of social life : they are generally detrimental to health, by keeping the body inactive, and encroaching on the hours of rest : they produce a feverish agitation of the spirits as hurtful to the mind, as habitual dram-drinking would be to the body : they level all distinctions of sense and folly, vice and virtue ; and bring together, on the same footing, men and women of decent and of the most abandoned manners. Persons who take pleasure in play seldom fail to become immoderately attached to it ; and neglect of business, and the ruin of fortune, family, and reputation, are too frequently the consequence. Savages are addicted to gaming ; and, in this respect, whatever difference there may be in the dress, or colour of the skin, the characters of the gentleman gambler

gambler and gambling savage are not only similar, but the same. The savage at play will lose his wife and children and personal liberty; the other will throw away in the same manner what should support his wife and children, and keep himself out of a jail; and it is well if he stop short of self-murder. Is it possible to keep at too great distance from such enormities? and can the man, who once engages in this dreadful business, say when he will stop, or how far he may go? LET NO SUCH MAN BE TRUSTED.

391. Our thoughts, as well as the real occurrences of life, may draw forth our passions; and one may work one's mind into a ferment of anger, or some other violent discomposure, without having been exposed to any temptation, and merely by ruminating on certain objects. When we find this to be the case, let us instantly give a new, and if possible an opposite, direction to the current of our thoughts. If any evil passion get hold of us, and will not yield to reason, if for example we be very angry with an injurious neighbour,

Y y

let

let us cease to think of him, and employ ourselves in some other interesting and more agreeable recollection ; let us call to mind some happy incident of our past life ; let us think of our Creator, and of his goodness to mankind and to us in particular ; let us meditate on the importance of our present conduct, and of that tremendous futurity which is before us : or, if we be not at this particular time well prepared for serious thought, let us apply to some book of harmless amusement, or join in some entertaining conversation : and thus we shall get rid of the passion that haunts us, and forget both its object and its cause.

S E C T. VII.

Of the Passions, as they display themselves in the Look and Gesture.

392. **P**ASSIONS being commotions of the body as well as of the mind, it is no wonder that they should display themselves

selves in the looks and behaviour. If they did not, our intercourse with one another would be much more difficult and dangerous than it is ; because we could not so readily discover the characters of men, or what is passing in their minds. But the outward expression of the passions is a sort of universal language ; not very extensive indeed, but sufficiently so to give us information of many things which it concerns us to know, and which otherwise we could not have known. When a man is even at pains to conceal his emotions, his eyes, features, complexion, and voice will discover them to a discerning observer ; and when he is at no pains to hide or disguise what he feels, the outward indications will be so significant, that hardly any person can mistake their meaning : his anger, for example, though he should not utter a word, will contract his brows, flash in his eyes, make his lips quiver, and give irregular motions to his limbs. Sallust says of Catiline, that his eyes had a disagreeable glare, that his complexion was pale, his walk sometimes quick and some-

Y y 2

times

times flow, and that his general appearance betokened a discomposure of mind approaching to insanity.

393. It must be remarked here, that all are not equally quicksighted in discerning the inward emotion by means of the outward sign. Some have great acuteness in this respect, some very little : which may in part be owing to habits of attention or inattention. If there be men, as I believe there are, who study almost every countenance that comes in their way, whether of man or of beast, and if there be others who seldom mind things of that nature, it is reasonable to suppose that the former will have more of this acuteness than the latter. The talent I speak of is sometimes called *skill in physiognomy*, or *physiognomony* ; which last form of the word is more suitable to its Greek original. Aristotle, and other ancient philosophers, wrote of it ; and there were in ancient times persons whose profession it was to judge of the character from the outward appearance. One of these, having seen Socrates, without knowing who he was, pronounced him
to

to be a very bad man, and enslaved to some of the worst passions in human nature. This was reported to Socrates, as a proof of the presumption and folly of the physiognomist. But Socrates told them, that the man had discovered uncommon penetration; for that he was by nature subject to all those passions, though with the aid of reason and philosophy he had now got the better of them.

§ 394. I remark, secondly, That as all human minds are not equally susceptible of warm emotion, so all human bodies are not equally liable to receive impressions from the mind. There is an awkwardness in the gestures of some people, and a want of meaning in their faces, which make the outward appearance pretty much the same at all times, unless they be under great agitation. This may be in part constitutional and partly the effect of habit. That uniformity of feature which the Stoics affected, and in which they supposed the dignity of man in a great measure to consist, was no doubt in many of them assumed and artificial. But when we

we see the looks of one child continually varying as his thoughts vary, and those of another rarely undergoing any sensible change, we must impute this diversity to constitution, as we cannot suppose there is art or affectation in the case. In the countenance of Garrick there was more variety of expression than I ever saw in any other. This, after he became a player, he studied and practised with extraordinary application: but the same thing was observable in him from his earliest years; as I have been assured by those who knew him when a boy.

395. I remark, thirdly, That all states of society do not allow equal scope to the outward and visible display of the passions. People in civilized life, from the awe in which they stand of the fashion and of one another, are at pains to curb, or at least to hide, their more violent emotions: whereas among savages, and persons little acquainted with decorum, there is hardly any restraint of this sort. Hence the intercourse of the latter is always more boisterous than that of the former, whether the
the

the conversation lead to joy or sorrow, merriment or anger; and their countenances are more deeply impressed with the traces of their predominant passions. Artists, too, as I have elsewhere remarked, who employ themselves in the nicer parts of mechanics, have generally a fixedness of feature suited to the earnest attention which they are obliged to bestow on their work: while those who can ply their trade and amuse themselves at the same time with discourse, have for the most part smoother faces, and features less significant.

396. Though there are many who, from inattention or other causes, are not acute in discerning human characters, yet almost every man is to a certain degree a physiognomist. Every one can distinguish an angry from a placid, a chearful from a melancholy, a thoughtful from a thoughtless, and a dull from a penetrating, countenance. Children are capable of this; and soon learn to fear the frowns, and take encouragement from the smiles, of the nurse; to participate in her joys or sorrows,

forrows, when they see the outward signs of those emotions ; and to stand more in awe of an acute than of a listless observer. The faces of the more sagacious brutes are not without expression. A curst cur and a well-natured dog, a high-mettled and a spiritless horse, are known by their countenance and carriage ; and one might perceive intuitively, that wolves, foxes, polecats, and bull-dogs, are dangerous animals, and that from asses, sheep, calves, lambs, and kids, one has nothing to fear. He who acknowledges these facts, and has observed what varieties of expression may be displayed in pictures and statues, will admit, that physiognomy is a sort of science, and not destitute of truth ; and that by a careful observer considerable progress may be made in it.

397. But observe, that it is not from the countenance alone that physiognomists form their opinions. They must hear a man speak, and see him move, and act, and smile ; they must be acquainted with his general carriage, before they can decide upon his character. Painters have
observed,

observed, that the position of the head is particularly expressive. Humility and sorrow appear in its hanging down; arrogance, in lifting it up, and tossing it back; some of the gentler affections, in its inclining to one side; and steadiness, in its rising erect between the shoulders. Love, Hatred, Joy, Grief, Intreaty, Threatening, Mildness, as well as Admiration, Anger, and Scorn, have visible effects on the attitudes of the head. The hands too, which it is difficult to move gracefully, and which those who have not been accustomed to elegant society ought to move but seldom, and with caution,—the hands, I say, by their motions and gestures, express various states of the mind, as Admiration, Hope, Consent, Refusal, Fear, Intreaty, and many others. But to describe those motions with accuracy is hardly possible; and, in a matter of this kind, inaccurate rules are worse than no rules at all, as they lead to affectation, and consequently to ungracefulness.

398. Some people show their characters more slowly than others. With one you

Z z

think

think yourself acquainted at first sight ; of another, after long trial, you can make nothing, and, if he is very cautious, he may elude your acutest observation for years. Hence let the physiognomist learn to be rather slow than hasty in forming a judgement. Let him be on his guard, though appearances are favourable ; and let charity incline him to moderation, even when he may think he has certainly detected a dangerous or disagreeable associate. We are often dissatisfied with a man at his first appearance, whom we afterwards find worthy of high esteem. In short, Physiognomy is, in most cases, a conjectural science, and must not be implicitly trusted ; for objections may be found to almost every one of its principles. Marshal Turenne, the greatest commander and one of the best men of his time, had so unpromising a look, that when meanly dressed, as he often was, strangers were apt to mistake him for a simpleton. The same thing is recorded of another illustrious commander, Philopemen : and our Charles II. though a man of great pleafantry

fancy and good nature, had a stern and forbidding countenance.

399. Though I have long been studious of physiognomy, and sometimes flattered myself that I had skill in it, I dare not venture to treat of it in any other way, than by offering a few slight observations: well knowing, that on such a subject people are apt to run into wild theories more likely to mislead than to inform. The opinions of Aristotle and other old writers have been collected by Joannes Baptista Porta; whose book, tho' formerly in some esteem, will give little satisfaction to the unbiassed and inquisitive observer. He, and some others, have amused themselves with fancying likenesses between the faces of men and of brutes, and assigning that character to the man which predominates in the beast he resembles. They have also, from the proportions of particular parts of a human body, drawn conclusions with respect to the virtues or vices of the soul with which it is animated. And some would estimate the powers of a man's understanding by

Z z z

the

the shape of his skull, and the outline of his brow and nose. I have neither time nor inclination to enter into these inquiries; though I will not take it upon me to say, that they are wholly without foundation.

400. Of all the physiognomists I know, ancient or modern, the most eminent is John Gaspard Lavater, a clergyman of Zurich in Switzerland. He has published two or three magnificent volumes, and adorned them with many curious drawings. The work has noble strains of eloquence, and proves the author to be a man of great piety and goodness of heart; and many of his remarks, on the human and other figures which he presents to his reader, are such as, I think, no person of observation can refuse to acquiesce in. But he is frequently whimsical, and in affirmation too positive. His style, though beautiful in particular passages, is upon the whole diffuse, incoherent, and declamatory, to such a degree, that I believe it would be a difficult matter to digest his notions into a system. Some persons in his neighbourhood

bourhood having been poisoned with the wine in the Eucharist, Lavater, supposing it had been done intentionally, preached a sermon with extraordinary vehemence ; in which was this remarkable saying, which I mention, to show his confidence in his art, “ I would not advise the perpetrator of this horrid deed to come in my way ; for I shall certainly know him by his look, if ever I set my eyes upon him.” Lavater is a man of genius and penetration, and a good deal of entertainment may be found in his book. But I am afraid it will not teach sagacity to those on whom nature has not bestowed that talent ; nor form to habits of minute attention those who are habitually inattentive. And if it should encourage the unskilful to form rash judgements, there is reason to apprehend that it may do more harm than good. I shall not attempt to give a more particular account of it ; for that would lead me too far from my present purpose.

401. Every body knows, that virtuous and innocent affections give an agreeable expression

expression to the countenance, and criminal passions the contrary. Anger, discontent, despair, disfigure the features, distort the limbs, and give dissonance to the voice; while good humour, contentment, hope, joy, benevolence, have a pleasing effect in setting off the body to advantage. Emotions that are innocent, and at the same time in some degree painful, as pity and rational sorrow, discompose the features; but such discomposure, far from being unseemly, may be even captivating: beauty in tears has been found irresistible. When a passion becomes habitual, it is reasonable to suppose, that those muscles, of the brows, eyes, nostrils, cheeks, and mouth, over which it has influence, will, by acting continually in the same way, produce traces in the countenance, and fix upon it a visible character. This appears even in early life. A peevish or good-humoured, a chearful or melancholy, boy, soon contracts what we call a peevish or good-humoured, a chearful or melancholy, look. And if these dispositions continue to predominate in him, the lines produced by

by them in the several parts of the face will in time become as permanent as those which are seen in the palm of the hand. What it may be, which connects certain emotions of the soul with certain configurations of the muscles of the face and certain attitudes of the head and limbs, I cannot determine; Des Cartes and others have inquired into this matter, but without success; and, till the union of the soul and body be understood, this will probably remain a mystery impenetrable to man.

402. In order to form some idea of the expression of the countenance, we are desired to suppose four parallel lines to be drawn across it; one in the direction of the eyebrows, another in that of the eyes, a third in that of the lower part of the nose, and a fourth in that of the mouth. It is not meant, that these must be right lines, or parallel in the geometrical sense of the word; they are only supposed to have the same direction nearly, and to extend from the one side of the face to the other. While they remain parallel, and with little or no incurvation upwards or downwards,

downwards, the countenance will indicate tranquillity, that is, a composed state of mind without emotion. If they seem depressed in the middle of the face, and elevated towards the sides of it, the expression will incline to cheerfulness; if raised in the middle and depressed towards the sides, the effect will be contrary, and convey an idea of melancholy, or at least of sedateness. I do not say, that this holds invariably; I mean, that it is so for the most part: and every thing must be understood to be thus limited that relates to the present subject.

403. The raising of the line of the mouth at the two extremities is so well known to express cheerfulness, that unskilful painters, in order to give that meaning to their portraits, turn up the corners of the mouth, even when the rest of the countenance betokens composure, as the features of those who sit for their picture commonly do. But this contrivance produces a smirk or affected grin, rather than a smile, because the rest of the face is not conformable to it. When the
lines

lines above mentioned, especially that of the eye-brows (the most expressive of them all) are twisted, or irregularly bent, it generally intimates discomposure of mind, and, when much twisted, violent discomposure. There is expression too, as every body knows, in the colour of certain features. A bright and sparkling eye, and increased ruddiness in the cheeks and lips, accompany keen emotions, as languid eyes and pale lips and cheeks betoken the contrary.

404. Admiration, as formerly observed, elevates the eye-brows, opens the mouth and eyes, fixes the attention upon the admired object, raises the hands, and spreads the fingers: astonishment opens the mouth and eyes still wider, and gives a greater and more irregular elevation to the brows. If to astonishment fear be added, both rows of the teeth will appear, and those ends of the eye-brows which are next the nose will be much wrinkled, and drawn downward so as to hide the upper eye-lid. Esteem composes the countenance, elevates the pupils of the eyes, draws the eye-brows

3 A

down

down towards the nose, contracts the nostrils, opens the mouth a little, and gently depresses the corners of it. Veneration sometimes assumes the same appearances a little heightened, elevating the pupil of the eye till it almost disappear under the eyelid; and sometimes shuts the mouth and eyes, inclining the face towards the ground, and spreading the hand upon the breast.

405. Contempt elevates and draws back the head, wrinkles and pulls down the brows, distends and raises the nostrils, shuts the mouth and depresses the corners of it, makes the under lip more prominent than the upper, turns away the face from the despised object, and directs the eyes towards it obliquely. Grief raises the brows towards the middle of the forehead, depressing them at the temples, gives a similar direction to the line of the mouth, half shuts the eyes, hiding the pupils under the upper eye-lids, and frequently draws forth tears. Joy smooths the forehead, opens and illuminates the eyes, raises the brows and the corners of the mouth, gently distends the nostrils, and heightens the complexion.

plexion. Laughter raises the corners of the mouth still higher, giving the same direction to the line of the brows, discovers both rows of the teeth, moistens and almost shuts the eyes, diffuses wrinkles over several parts of the cheeks and forehead, and affects the voice in a very sensible and peculiar manner.

406. I need not enter further into the detail of this subject; what has been said may serve as a specimen, and that is perhaps sufficient. Descriptions of physiognomy it is not easy to make intelligible without drawings; and if one had a good assortment of these, little description would be necessary. Le Brun's Passions are in every print-shop, and must be allowed to have considerable merit; though the features expressive of the more violent emotions are perhaps exaggerated into what the Italians call *caricatura*: Chodowiecki has made some valuable additions to Le Brun, which may be found in Lavater.—I conclude with observing, that several energies of the *understanding*, as belief, doubt, perplexity, denial, &c. do also display them-

selfes visibly in the look and gesture ; as may be seen in that admirable Cartoon of Raffaelle, which represents Paul preaching at Athens.

The End of PSYCHOLOGY.

E L E -

E L E M E N T S O F M O R A L S C I E N C E.

PART SECOND.

NATURAL THEOLOGY.

INTRODUCTION.

407. **N**ATURAL THEOLOGY explains what human reason can discover concerning the being and attributes of God. It is a science of boundless extent; but we must confine ourselves to a few general principles. In respect

respect of certainty it is equal to any science; for its proofs rise to demonstration: in point of dignity it is superior to all others; its object being the Creator of the Universe: and its utility is so great, that it lays the only sure foundation of human society and human happiness. — The proofs of the Divine Existence are innumerable, and continually force themselves upon our observation; and are withal so clear and striking, that nothing but the most obstinate prejudice, and extreme depravity of both heart and understanding, could ever bring any rational being to disbelieve, or doubt of it. With good reason, therefore, it is, that the Psalmist calls the man “a fool, who saith in his heart, There is no God.” — Without belief in God, a considerate person (if it were possible for such a person to be without this belief) could never possess tranquillity or comfort; for to him the world would seem a chaos of misery and confusion. But where this belief is established, all things appear to be right, and to have a benevolent tendency; and give encouragement,

couragement to hope, patience, submission, gratitude, adoration, and other good affections essential to human felicity.

408. That men, from education or from nature, might have some notion of duty, even though they were to harden themselves into Atheists, can hardly be doubted: but that notion would, in such men, be wholly ineffectual. From the fear of shame, or of human laws, the atheist may be decent in his outward behaviour; but he cannot act from any nobler principle. And if at any time he could promote (what he takes to be) his interest, by the commission of the greatest crime, it is plain that there would be nothing to restrain him, provided he could conceal his guilt; which any man might do occasionally, and which men of great wealth or power could do at any time. Atheism is utterly subversive of morality, and consequently of happiness: and as to a community, or political society, of atheists, it is plainly impossible, and never took place in any nation.—They therefore, who teach atheistical doctrines, or who endeavour

deavour to make men doubtful in regard to this great and glorious truth, **THE BEING OF GOD**, do every thing in their power to overturn government, to unhinge society, to eradicate virtue, to destroy happiness, and to promote confusion, madness, and misery.

409. On what human reason discovers of the Divine nature is partly founded the evidence even of revelation itself. For no pretended revelation can be true, which contradicts what by human reason is demonstrable of the divine perfections. We do not prove from Scripture, that God exists; because they who deny God deny the authority of Scripture too. But when, by rational proof, we have evinced his being and attributes, we may then ascertain the truth of divine revelation, or detect the falsehood of a pretended one. When we have, from the purity of its doctrine, and the external evidence of miracles, prophecy, and human testimony, satisfied ourselves of the truth of the Christian revelation, it becomes us to believe even such parts of it as
could

could never have been found out by human reason. And thus it is, that our natural notions of God and his providence are wonderfully refined and improved by what is revealed in holy writ : so that the meanest of our people, who has had a Christian education, knows a great deal more on these subjects, than could ever be discovered by the wisest of the antient philosophers. That many things in the divine government, and many particulars relating to the divine nature, as declared in Scripture, should surpass our comprehension, is not to be wondered at ; for we are daily puzzled with things more within our sphere : we know that our own soul and body are united, but of the manner of that union we know nothing. A past eternity we cannot comprehend ; and a future eternity is an object by which our reason is astonished and confounded : yet nothing can be more certain, than that one eternity is past and another to come.

410. In evincing the being of God, two sorts of proof have been employed ; which are called the proofs *a priori* and *a posteriori*.

ri. In the former, the being of God is proved from this consideration, that his existence is necessary, and that it is absurd and impossible to suppose that he does not exist. This argument is fully discussed by Dr Clarke, in the first part of his excellent book on the evidence of natural and revealed religion. The proof *a posteriori* shows, from the present constitution of things, that there is and must be a Supreme Being, of infinite goodness, power, and wisdom, who created and supports them. This last is the most obvious proof, and the most easily comprehended; and withal so satisfying, that the man must be mad who refuses to be convinced by it. I shall therefore give a brief account of this argument; referring to Dr Clarke for the other.—Natural Theology consists of two parts. In the first, we demonstrate the existence of God; in the second, his attributes. These parts however are strictly connected; for the same arguments that prove the first prove also the second.

CHAPTER I.

OF THE DIVINE EXISTENCE.

411. **T**HAT we ourselves and innumerable other things exist, may be taken for granted, as a first principle, as evident as any axiom in Euclid. Hence we infer, that something must always have existed. For if ever there was a time when nothing existed, there must have been a time when something began to be; and that something must have come into being without a cause; since, by the supposition, there was nothing before it. But that a thing should begin to exist, and yet proceed from no cause, is both absurd and inconceivable; all men, by the law of their nature, being necessarily determined to believe, that whatever begins to exist proceeds from some cause. Therefore some being must have existed from eternity.—This being must have been either dependent on something else, or not dependent on any thing else. Now an eternal succession of depend-

ent beings, or a being which is dependent and yet exists from eternity, is impossible. For if every part of such a succession be dependent, then the whole must be so; and, if the whole be dependent, there must be something on which it depends; and that something must be prior in time to that which depends on it; which is impossible, if that which is dependent be from eternity. It follows, that there must be an eternal and independent being, on whom all other beings depend.

412. Some atheists seem to acknowledge a first cause, when they ascribe the origin of the universe to *chance*. But it is not easy to guess what they mean by this word. We call those things *accidental*, *casual*, or the *effects of chance*, whose immediate causes we are unacquainted with; as the changes of the weather, for example; which however every body believes to be owing to some adequate cause, though we cannot find it out. Sometimes, when an intelligent being does a thing without design, as when a man throwing a stone out of his field happens to strike a man whom he did not see; it is called *accidental*. In affirming

ing that the universe proceeds from chance, it would appear, that atheists mean, either that it has no cause at all, or that its cause did not act intelligently, or with design, in the production of it. That the universe proceeds from no cause, we have seen to be absurd. And therefore, we shall overturn all the atheistical notions concerning chance, if we can show, what indeed is easily shown, and what no considerate person can be ignorant of, that the cause of the universe is intelligent and wise, and in creating it, have acted with intelligence and wisdom.

413. Where-ever we find a number of things, complex in their structure, and yet perfectly similar, we believe them to be the work of design. Were a man to find a thousand pairs of shoes, of the same shape, size, and materials, it would not be easy to persuade him that the whole was chance-work. Now the instances of complex and similar productions in nature are so very numerous as to exceed computation. All human bodies, for example, though each of them consists of almost an infinite number

ber of parts, are perfectly uniform in their structure and functions; and the same thing may be said of all the animals and plants of any particular species. To suppose this the effect of undesigning chance, or the production of an unintelligent cause, is as great an absurdity as it is possible to imagine.

414. Further: a composition of parts mutually adapted we must always consider as the work of design; especially if it be found in a great variety of instances. Suppose a body, an equilateral prism, for example, to be formed by chance; and suppose a certain quantity of matter accidentally determined to resolve itself into tubes of a certain dimension. It is as infinite to one, that these tubes should have orifices equal to the base of the prism; there being an infinity of other magnitudes equally possible. Suppose the orifices equal, it is as infinite to one that any of the tubes should be prismatical; infinite other figures being equally possible. Suppose one of them prismatical, there is, for the same reason, an infinity of chances, that it shall
not

not be equilateral. Suppose it equilateral, there are still infinite chances that the tube and prism shall never meet. Suppose them to meet, there are innumerable chances that their axes shall not be in the same direction. Suppose them to have the same direction, there are still many chances that the angles of the prism shall not coincide with those of the tube: and supposing them to coincide, there are innumerable chances that no force shall be applied in such a direction as to make the prism enter the tube.

415. How many millions of chances, then, are there against the *casual* formation, of one prism inserted in a prismatic tube! which yet a small degree of design could easily accomplish. Were we to find, in a solitary place, a composition of this kind, of which the tube was iron and the prism of wood, it would not be easy for us to believe, that such a thing was the work of chance. And if so small a thing cannot be without design, what shall we say of the mechanism of a plant, an animal, a system of plants and animals, a world, a system

system of worlds, an universe ! No person, who has any pretensions to rationality, and is not determined to shut his eyes against the truth, will ever bring himself to believe, that works so stupendous could be the effect of undefining chance.

416. To set this argument in a proper light, it would be necessary to take a survey of the works of nature ; in which the vast number of systems, the artful union of parts, the nice proportions established between every part and system and its respective end, the innumerable multitudes of species, and the infinite numbers of forms in every species, are so conspicuous as to prove, beyond all doubt, that the Creator of the world is infinitely wise, powerful, and good. Let a man examine only a grain of corn, by cutting it open and viewing it with a microscope ; and then let him consider another grain as planted in the earth, and by the influence of heat, soil, air, and moisture, springing up into a plant, consisting of a great number of vessels that disperse the vital sap into every part, and endowed with
the

the power, or susceptibility, of growing in bulk, till in due time it produce a number of other grains of the same kind, necessary to the existence of man and other creatures ;—let a rational being attend to this fact, and compare it with the noblest efforts of human art ; and if he is not struck with the infinite superiority of the one to the other,—what can we say of him, but that he is void of understanding ! And yet the mechanism and growth of a vegetable seems an inconsiderable thing, when we think of the wisdom and power displayed in many other works of nature.

417. What a fabric is our solar system ! wherein bodies of such enormous magnitude accomplish their revolutions through spaces immense ; and with a regularity, than which nothing can be more perfect. The distance of the planets from the sun, and their several magnitudes, are determined with the utmost wisdom, and according to the nicest geometrical proportion. The central orb, whether we consider its glorious appearance, its asto-

3 C

nishing

nishing greatness, or the beneficial influence of its light and heat, is such an object as no rational being can contemplate without adoring the Creator. We have good reason to believe, that there are thousands of other suns and systems of worlds, more glorious perhaps and more extensive than ours ; which form such a stupendous whole, that the human soul, labouring to comprehend it, loses sight of itself and of all sublunary things, and is totally overwhelmed with astonishment and veneration. With such thoughts in our view, we are apt to forget the wonders that lie immediately around us, and that the smallest plant or animal body amounts to a demonstration of the divine existence. But God appears in all his works, in the least as well as in the greatest ; and there is not, in the whole circle of human sciences, any one truth confirmed by so many irresistible proofs, as the existence of the Deity.

418. The diurnal motion of the planets is the easiest way possible of exposing all their parts to the influence of light and heat.

heat. Their globular form is the fittest for motion, and for the free circulation of atmosphere around them; and at the same time supplies the most capacious surface. The principle of gravitation, prevailing through the whole system, and producing innumerable phenomena, is a most amazing instance of unbounded variety united with the strictest uniformity and proportion.—But it is impossible in a few pages to give such an enumeration of particulars, as would do any justice to the subject. The man, who should suppose a large city, consisting of a hundred thousand palaces; all finished in the minutest parts, and furnished with the greatest elegance and variety of ornament, and with all sorts of books, pictures, and statues, executed in the most ingenious manner; to have been produced by the accidental blowing of winds and rolling of sands, would justly be accounted irrational. But to suppose the universe, or our solar system, or this earth, to be the work of undesigning chance, is an absurdity incomparably greater.

419. And now,—from a particular survey of the terraqueous globe ; of the atmosphere, so necessary to light and life and vegetation ; of the different productions of different countries, so well adapted to the constitution and use of the inhabitants : from the variety of useful minerals to be found in all parts of the earth ; from the wonderful mechanism and still more wonderful growth of vegetables, their vast number and variety, their beauty and utility, and the great abundance of such as are most useful, particularly grass and corn ; from the structure, life, motion, and instincts of animals ; from the exact correspondence of their instincts to their necessities ; from the different kinds of them and of vegetables having been so long preserved ; from the similitude between all the individuals of each species ; from the body and soul of man so replete with wonders ; from his intellectual and moral faculties ; and from innumerable other particulars that come under the cognizance of man ;—we might proceed to set the Divine Existence in a still clearer light, if

if that were necessary: but the subject is so copious that we cannot enter upon it. We should injure it by a brief summary; and a full detail would comprehend astronomy, geography, natural history, natural philosophy, and several other sciences. I therefore refer you to what has been written on it, by Xenophon, in the fourth chapter of his first book of *Memorabilia*; by Cicero, in his second book *De natura deorum*; by Derham, Ray, Fenelon, Newton; by Clarke, Bentley, Abernethy, &c. in their sermons; and by other ingenious authors.

420. Some have urged, that there are in the universe many marks of irregularity and want of design, as well as regularity and wisdom; and that therefore we have no evidence, that the being who made all things is perfectly good and wise.—But though we were to admit the fact, the inference would not be fair. The wonderful contrivance which appears in the arrangement of the solar system, or even in the human body, abundantly proves the Creator to be infinitely wise. That he
has

has not thought fit to make all things equally beautiful and excellent, can never be an imputation on his wisdom and goodness: for how absurd would it be to say, that he would have displayed more wisdom, if he had endowed all things with life, perception, and reason! Stones and plants, air and water, are most useful things, and would have been much less useful if they had been percipient beings; as the inferior animals would have been both less useful and less happy, if they had been rational. Their existence, therefore, and their natures, are proofs of the Divine goodness and wisdom, instead of being arguments against it.

421. Besides, no man of sense accounts himself a complete judge of any work, even of a fellow-creature, unless he understand its end and structure, as well as the workman himself does. When we wish to know with certainty the value of a ship, or a house, or any complex machine, we consult those who are skilled in such things; for them only we hold to be competent judges. In a complex contrivance there

there may be many parts, of the greatest importance, which an unskilful observer would not perceive the use of, or would perhaps declare to be useless. Now in the course of Providence, a vast number of events and objects may be employed to accomplish one great end; and it is impossible for us to pronounce reasonably of any one event or object, that it is useless or improper, unless we know its tendency, and connection with other things both past and future; which in cases innumerable we cannot do. For of the past we know but little, the present we know imperfectly, and of the future we have no certain knowledge beyond what is revealed. The system of Providence relating to us and to our final destination, extends through thousands of years, as we have good reason to believe; but our life is short, and our views are bounded by our experience, which is very limited. That therefore may be a most wise and beneficent dispensation, which to a captious mind and fallible judgement may appear the contrary.

422. More-

422. Moreover, the Deity intended, that the nature of all created things should be progressive. Many years pass away before a man arrives at maturity; and many days, before a plant can yield good fruit. Every thing is imperfect, while advancing to perfection; and we cannot say of any thing, whether it be well or ill-contrived for answering its end, till we know what its state of maturity will be, and what the effects are whereof it may be productive. Physical evils may, as will be shown by and by, be improved into blessings; and it will also be shown, that Moral evil is a consequence of that law of nature which makes us capable of virtue and happiness. Even in this world, Providence often brings good out of evil; and every man of observation must have perceived, that certain events of his life, which when they happened seemed to be great misfortunes, have been found to be great blessings in the end.

423. If, then, that which seems evil may really be good, for any thing we know to the contrary; and if that which
is

is really evil often does, and always may, produce good : how can man be so presumptuous as to suppose, because he cannot distinctly see the nature and use of some things around him, that therefore the Creator of the world is not supremely good and wise ! No man can draw this conclusion, unless he believe himself infallible in his knowledge of all things past, present, and future ; and he who believes so, if there be any such, is a fool.

C H A P. II.

OF THE DIVINE ATTRIBUTES.

424. **O**UR knowledge of the Divine Nature, tho' sufficient to raise within us the highest adoration and love, must needs be very imperfect ; for we cannot form a distinct idea of any moral or intellectual quality, unless we find some trace of it in ourselves. Now God must possess innumerable perfections, which neither we, nor any created being, can comprehend. When we ascribe to him every

3 D

good

good quality that we can conceive, and consider him as possessed of them all in supreme perfection, and as free from every imperfection, we form the best idea of him that we can: but it must fall infinitely short of the truth. The attributes of God, which it is in our power in any degree to conceive, or to make the subject of investigation, have been divided into NATURAL, as *Unity, Self-Existence, Spirituality, Omnipotence, Immutability, Eternity*; INTELLECTUAL, as *Knowledge and Wisdom*; and MORAL, as *Justice, Goodness, Mercy, Holiness*.

425. That God is, has been proved already. That there are more gods than one, we have no evidence, and therefore cannot rationally believe. Nay even from the light of nature we have evidence, that there is one only. For in the works of creation there appears that perfect unity of design, which naturally determines an attentive spectator to refer them all to one first cause. Accordingly, the wisest men in the heathen world, though they worshipped inferior *deities*, (I should rather say *names which they substituted for deities*), did yet.

yet seem to acknowledge one supreme God, the greatest and best of beings, the father of gods and men. It is probable, that belief in one God was the original belief of mankind with respect to Deity. But, partly from their narrow views, which made them think that one being could not, without subordinate agents, superintend all things; partly from their flattery to living great men, and gratitude to the dead, disposing them to pay divine honours to human creatures; partly from fanciful analogies between the Divine Providence and earthly governments; and partly from the figures of poetry by which they saw the attributes of the Deity personified, they soon corrupted the original belief, and fell into polytheism and idolatry. And no antient people ever retained long their belief in the one true God, except the Jews, who were enlightened by revelation; and even they were frequently inclined to adopt the superstitions of their neighbours. We see then, that, in order to ascertain and fix mens notions of the

Divine *Unity*, Revelation seems to be necessary.

426. Self-existence or Independence is another *natural* attribute of God. If he depended on any thing, that thing would be superior and prior to him, which is absurd; because he himself is the supreme and the first cause: therefore his existence does not depend on any thing whatever. The attribute of self-existence is something that surpasses our comprehension; and no wonder; since all the beings that we see around us in the world are dependent. But, as already observed, there are many things which we must acknowledge to be true, notwithstanding that we cannot comprehend them.

427. We see the material universe in motion; but matter is inert, and, so far as we know, nothing can move it but mind. Therefore God is a spirit. We do not mean that his nature is the same with that of our soul: it is infinitely more excellent. But we mean, that he possesses intelligence and active power in supreme perfection; and as these qualities do not belong to matter,

matter, which is neither active nor intelligent, we must refer them to that which is not matter, but mind.—Some of the ancients thought, that God is the soul of the universe, and that the universe is, as it were, his body. But this cannot be; for where-ever there is body, there must be inactivity, and consequently imperfection. He is therefore a pure spirit. Nor can we conceive, that he is confined within the limits of creation, as a soul is within its body; or that he is liable to impressions from material things, as the soul is from the body; or that material things are instruments necessary to the exertion of his attributes, as our bodies are to the exertion of our faculties. It must be as easy for him, to act beyond the bounds of creation, as within them; to create new worlds, as to cease from creation. He is every where present and active; but it is a more perfect presence and activity, than that of a soul within a body.—Another notion once prevailed, similar to that which has been just now confuted, that the world is animated, as a body is by a soul, not by the Deity himself,

himself, but by an universal spirit, which he created in the beginning, and of which the souls of men and other animals are parts or emanations. This I mention, not because a confutation is necessary; for it is mere hypothesis, without any shadow of evidence; but because it may be of use in explaining some passages of ancient authors, particularly of Virgil, who once and again alludes to it *.

428. In order to be satisfied, that God is omnipotent, we need only to open our eyes, and look round upon the wonders of his creation. To produce such astonishing effects, as we see in the universe, and experience in our own frame; and to produce them out of nothing, and sustain them in the most perfect regularity, must certainly be the effect of power which is able to do all things, and which therefore nothing can resist. But the divine power cannot extend to what is either impossible in itself, or unsuitable to the perfection of his nature. To make the same thing at the same

* *Æneid*. vi. 724. *Geor.* iv. 220.

time

time to be and not to be, is plainly impossible; and to act inconsistently with justice, goodness, and wisdom, must be equally impossible to a being of infinite purity.

429. That God is from everlasting to everlasting, is evident from his being self-existent and almighty. That he was from all eternity, was proved already; and it can admit of no doubt, that what is independent and omnipotent must continue to all eternity.—In treating of the eternity of God, as well as of his omnipresence, some authors have puzzled themselves to little purpose, by attempting to explain in what manner he is connected with infinite space and endless duration. But it is vain to search into those mysteries; as they lie far beyond the reach of all human, and most probably of all created intelligence. Of this we are certain, for upon the principle just now mentioned it may be demonstrated, that the Supreme Being had no beginning, and that of his existence there can be no end.—That which is omnipotent and eternal, is incapable of being changed by any thing else; and that which is infinitely

ly wise and good can never be supposed to make any change in itself. The Deity, therefore, is unchangeable.

430. As he is the maker and preserver of all things, and every where present, (for to suppose him to be in some places only, and not in all, would be to suppose him a limited and imperfect being), his knowledge must be infinite, and comprehend at all times whatever is, or was, or shall be. Were his knowledge progressive, like ours, it would be imperfect; for they who become more wise must formerly have been less so.—Wisdom is the right exercise of knowledge: and that he is infinitely wise, is proved incontestably by the same arguments that prove his existence.

431. The goodness of God appears in all his works of creation and providence. Being infinitely and eternally happy in himself, it was goodness alone that could move him to create the universe, and give being and the means of happiness to the innumerable orders of creatures contained in it. Revelation gives such a display of the divine goodness, as must fill us with the
most

most ardent gratitude and adoration. For in it we find, that God has put it in our power, notwithstanding our degeneracy and unworthiness, to be happy both in this life and for ever; a hope which reason alone could never have permitted us to entertain on any ground of certainty. And here we may repeat, what was already hinted at, that although the right use of reason supplies our first notions of the divine nature, yet it is from revelation that we receive those distinct ideas of his attributes and providence, which are the foundation of our dearest hopes. The most enlightened of the heathen had no certain knowledge of his unity, spirituality, eternity, wisdom, justice, or mercy; and, by consequence, could never contrive a comfortable system of natural religion; as Socrates, the wisest of them, acknowledged.

432. Lastly; Justice is necessary to the formation of every good character; and therefore the Deity must be perfectly just. This, however, is an awful consideration to creatures, who, like us, are immersed in error and wickedness, and whose

conscience is always declaring, that every sin deserves punishment. It is reasonable to think, that a being infinitely good must also be of infinite mercy: but still, the purity and justice of God must convey the most alarming thoughts to those who know themselves to have been, in instances without number, inexcusably criminal. But, from what is revealed in Scripture concerning the divine dispensations with respect to man, we learn, that, on performing certain conditions, we shall be forgiven and received into favour, by means, which at once display the divine mercy in the most amiable light, and fully vindicate the divine justice.

433. It is indeed impossible to understand the doctrines of our religion, and not to *wish at least* that they may be true: for they exhibit the most comfortable views of God and his providence; they recommend the purest and most perfect morality; and they breathe nothing throughout, but benevolence, equity, and peace. And one may venture to affirm, that no man ever *wished* the gospel to be true, who did not *find*

find it so. Its evidence is even more than sufficient to satisfy those who love it. And every man who knows it must love it, if he be a man of candour and a good heart.

The End of PNEUMATOLOGY.

3 E 2

A R-

A P P E N D I X.

Of the Incorporeal Nature of the Human Soul.

434. **M**AN is made up of a body and a soul, intimately connected together, we know not how, or when. In consequence of this connection, the body lives and moves, is nourished with food and refreshed by sleep, and for a certain time increases in bulk. When this connection is dissolved, the body is insensible and motionless, soon becomes cold, and gradually moulders into dust.—That the soul and body are distinct and different substances, was formerly inferred (see § 119.) from the general consent of mankind in regard to this matter. It seems to be natural for us to believe, that the soul may exist, and be happy or miserable, without the body. This appears from those notions, which in every age and country have prevailed, concerning a future state.

435. But

435. But of the soul's immateriality there is other evidence. When two things have some essential qualities in common, we refer them to one class, or at least consider them as somewhat similar in their nature. But when two things are found to have not one quality in common, we must consider them as totally unlike and different. If therefore any piece of matter (or body) appear to have qualities which we know for certain do not belong to matter, we conclude, that to this piece of matter there is joined something which is not matter.— The human frame presents to our outward senses a certain quantity of matter, divided into various parts of different shapes and colours. Now the essential qualities of matter we know from experience to be Gravity, Extension, Solidity, Inactivity, and some others. These qualities are all in the human body. But in the human frame there are many qualities, not only different from these, but altogether unlike them. We are conscious of Perceiving, Remembering, Judging, Imagining, Willing, and of a variety of passions, affections, and

and appetites. Surely these qualities, which are indisputably in the human frame, are very different from, and very unlike to, Hardness, Softness, Weight, Extension, and the other qualities of body. There is therefore in man something which cannot be called Body, because from body it is in every respect different.

436. Moreover : The further we carry our inquiries into matter, and its qualities, the more we are convinced, that it is essentially inactive, or incapable of beginning motion. But in the human frame we know for certain, that there is something essentially active, and capable of beginning motion in a thousand different ways. In the human frame, therefore, there are two things whose natures are not only unlike, but opposite : the one is Body, which is *essentially inactive* ; the other, which is *essentially active* — shall we call it Body too ? Then body must be something which unites in itself qualities directly opposite, and destructive of each other : that must be in it which is not in it ; it must at once have a certain quality, and not have that

that quality; it must be both active and inactive. Round squareness, white blackness, or red-hot ice, are as natural, and may be as easily conceived by the mind, as that one and the same thing should be, at one and the same time, capable of beginning motion, and incapable of beginning motion.—The human frame is partly material. It follows, therefore, from what has been said, that the human frame must also be in part *immaterial*, spiritual, or not corporeal. That part of it which is material we call our *body*; and that part of it which has been proved to be *immaterial* *, we call our *Soul*, *Spirit*, or *Mind*.

437. Many controversies have been raised about the origin of the soul, and the time when it is united with the body. The common opinion seems to be the most probable; namely, that the soul is created and united with the body when

* Till of late there was no ambiguity in this epithet, as here applied. But since our language began to decline, *Immaterial* has been licentiously used to signify *Unimportant*. The true English sense of it is, *Incorporeal*, *distinct from matter*.

the

the body is prepared for its reception. At what time, or in what manner, this union may take place, it is impossible for us to determine, and therefore vain to inquire. Let us not suppose it derogatory from the happiness or perfection of the Deity, to be always employed (if we may so speak) in creation. To omnipotence it must be as easy, and as glorious, to create, as not to create. The best philosophers have thought, that his continual energy is necessary to produce gravitation, and other appearances in the material world. That the divine providence extends to the minutest parts of creation, has been believed by wise men in all ages; is confirmed by revelation; and is agreeable to right reason. For as he is every where present, and of infinite power, it is impossible that any thing should happen without his permission.

438. When we consider man's helpless condition at his coming into this world; how ignorant he is, and how unfit for action; that all he ever acquires in knowledge is by experience and memory; that we have no remembrance of any thing previous

previous to the present state; and that both revelation and the conscience of mankind declare the punishment which the wicked fear, and the reward which the good hope for, hereafter, to be the consequence of their behaviour in this life:—when, I say, we lay all these things together, we must be satisfied, that the present is our first state of being. But it is said, that in this world we sometimes suffer evil which we do not deserve; that the vicious triumph while the virtuous are unsuccessful; that the infant child may be liable to want or disease, from the profusion or debauchery of the parent, and the harmless villager to ruin, from the crimes of his sovereign: and that, therefore, we must in a former state have incurred guilt, of which these and the like evils are the punishment.

439. This leads to an important, and, as many think, a difficult subject, the *Origin of Evil*; on which I shall make some remarks, after I have offered an observation or two upon the opinion that introduced it. First, It may be observed, that

the unequal distribution of good and evil in this life naturally turns our thoughts, not to a former, but to a future state of being ; and does in fact, as we shall see by and by, afford a proof of a future state. Secondly : Of virtues performed, or crimes committed, in a former state, we have no remembrance, consciousness, or belief : and to punish us for crimes which we cannot conceive that we ever committed, and of which we know nothing, is inconsistent with divine justice. And, thirdly, If we sinned, or suffered, in a former state, the origin of that sin or suffering must be as hard to be accounted for, as the origin of present evil.

440. Evil is of two sorts ; *Physical*, as pain, poverty, death ; and *Moral*, or vice.—

1. Our being subject to physical evil puts it in our power to exercise Patience, Fortitude, Resignation to the divine will, Trust in Providence, Compassion, Benevolence, Industry, Temperance, Humility, and the Fear of God. If there were no physical evil, there would hardly be an opportunity of exercising these virtues ; in which case

case our present state could not be, what both reason and scripture declare it to be, a state of probation. Besides: our present sufferings we may, if we please, convert into blessings; which we shall do, if we take occasion from them to cultivate the virtues above mentioned: for thus they will prove means of promoting our eternal happiness. The existence, therefore, of Physical Evil, being necessary to train us up in virtue, and consequently to prepare us for future felicity, is a proof of the goodness of God, instead of being an objection to it.

441. 2. Without virtue, such a creature as man could not be happy. In forming an idea of a happy state, we must always suppose it to be a state of virtue; the natural tendency of virtue being, to produce happiness; as vice invariably leads to misery. Now, man could not be capable of virtue, nor consequently of happiness, if he were not free, that is, if he had it not in his power to do either good or evil. And if he have this in his power, he must be liable to vice. Vice, therefore, or Moral Evil, is the effect of that

law of Divine providence, whereby man is made capable of virtue and happiness.—As the possibility of falling into error, and mistaking falsehood for truth, is necessary to the improvement of our rational powers, so the existence of evil, as well as of good, is necessary, at least in this life, to the improvement of our moral nature. And upon our improvement of our moral nature our future happiness must depend.

442. Supposing the present life to be preparatory to a future and eternal state, the evils we are now exposed to must to a good man appear inconsiderable. What are a few years of sorrow to an eternity of happiness? Not so much as a headach of an hour is to a thousand years of good health. And who would scruple to suffer pain for several months, if he could thus ensure health for many years?—But, in fact, the evils of life are not so great as some people represent them. There is in human nature a pliability, by which it can adapt itself to almost any circumstances: and contentment, and resignation to the divine will, which are virtues in every person's

person's power, are sufficient to render all the evils of life tolerable. And if to these virtues there be added a well-grounded hope of future felicity, which is also in the power of every person who is willing to be good, our present afflictions may become not only tolerable, but light. The wicked, indeed, must be unhappy both now and hereafter. But they will not suffer more than they deserve; they will be punished according to their works. And so far is their suffering from being an objection to the Divine character, that it would be a very strong objection if they were not to suffer. For he who is perfectly good must be perfectly just: and a being perfectly just must punish those who deserve punishment.

443. To ask, why we are not made infallible and perfect, and capable of happiness without virtue or liberty, is an impertinent and perhaps an impious question. It may as reasonably be asked, why there are not twenty planets in the solar system; why a stone was not made a man or an angel; or why the Deity did not make all his creatures

creatures equal to himself. Such questions deserve no answer, but this ; that whatever God has been pleased to do must be right, whether we can account for it or not. Creatures who have it in their power to be happy, and whose happiness will ever increase as they improve in virtue, are surely under the greatest obligations to be thankful to that Providence which has made them what they are.

Of the Immortality of the Soul.

444. **I**T is unnecessary to prove to a Christian, that his soul will never die ; because he believes that life and immortality have been brought to light by the gospel. But, though not necessary, it may be useful, to lay before him those arguments, whereby the immortality of the soul might be made appear, even to those who never heard of revelation, probable in the highest degree.—Whether the human soul shall die with the body, or survive death and live for ever, is an inquiry, which

which may be said to comprehend the three following questions. 1. Does the light of nature, unaided by revelation, afford any reason to think, that the soul of man *may possibly* survive the body? 2. Does the light of nature afford any reason to believe, that the soul *will actually* survive the body? 3. If it does, what may be reasonably conjectured concerning a future state?

445. SECTION I. Does the light of nature, unaided by revelation, afford any reason to think, that the human soul *may possibly* survive the body?—First: Death destroys the body by disuniting its parts, or preparing them for being disunited: and we have no reason to think that death can destroy in any other way, as we have never seen any thing die, which did not consist of parts. But the soul consists not of parts; having been proved to be incorporeal. Therefore, from the nature of death and of the soul, we have no evidence that death can destroy the soul. Consequently, the soul *may possibly*,
and

and for any thing we know to the contrary, survive the body.

446. Secondly: The soul is a substance of one kind, and the body of another; they are united; and death dissolves the union. We may conceive them to exist after this union is dissolved; for we see that the body does exist for some time after; and may by human art be made to exist for a long time. And as most men have in all ages entertained some notion of a future state, it must be agreeable to the laws of the human understanding to believe, that the soul *may* live when separated from the body. Now the dissolution of the union of two distinct substances, each of which is conceived to be capable of existing separate, can no more be supposed *necessarily* to imply the destruction of both the united substances, than the dissolution of the marriage union by death can be supposed to imply, of necessity, the destruction of both husband and wife. Therefore the union of the soul and body is not necessary to the existence of the soul after death. Consequently,

quently, the soul may possibly survive the body.

447. Thirdly : Naturalists observe, that the particles whereof our bodies consist are continually changing ; some going off, and others coming in their room : so that in a few years a human body becomes, not indeed different in appearance, but wholly different in substance. But the soul continues always the same. Therefore, even in this life, the soul survives, or may survive, several dissolutions of the body. And if so, it *may possibly* survive that other dissolution which happens at death.—It is true, these dissolutions are gradual and imperceptible ; whereas that is violent and sudden. But if the union of the soul and body be necessary to the existence of the soul, the dissolution of this union, whether sudden or gradual, whether violent or imperceptible, must destroy the soul. But the soul survives the gradual dissolution. Therefore, for any thing we know to the contrary, it *possibly may*, and probably will, survive that which is instantaneous.

3 G

448. Some

448. Some object, that it is only additional matter joined to our original body, which is gradually dissolved by the attrition of the parts ; whereas death dissolves the original body itself. Though this were granted, it must at any rate be allowed, that the soul has as much command over this additional matter as over the original body. For a full-grown man has at least as much command of his limbs, as an infant has of his ; and yet in the limbs of the former there must be a great deal of additional matter, which is not in the limbs of the latter. And the soul and body of a full-grown man do mutually affect each other, as much at least as the soul and body of an infant. Consequently, the union between our soul and this supposed additional matter is as strict and intimate as that between the soul and its supposed original body. But we find that the former union may be dissolved without injury to the soul. Therefore the union of the soul with its supposed original body *may* also be dissolved, without endangering the soul's existence.

449. Further :

449. Further: admitting the same doctrine of an original body, we must however observe, that living men may lose several of their limbs by amputation. Those limbs must contain parts of this original body, if there be any such thing. There is, then, a dissolution of the union between the soul and *part* of the original body; and a violent one too; which however affects not the existence of the soul. And therefore, for any thing that appears to the contrary, the soul *may possibly* survive the total dissolution at death.

450. But it is now time to reject this unintelligible doctrine of an original body. From a small beginning, man advances gradually to his full stature. At what period of his growth is it, that the original body is compleated, and the accession of additional matter commences? What is the original body? Is it the body of an embryo, of an infant, or of a man? Does the additional matter begin to adhere before the birth, or after it, in infancy, in childhood, in youth, or at maturity? These questions cannot be an-

swered ; and therefore we cannot admit the notion of an original body, as distinguishable from the additional matter whereby our bulk is increased. Consequently, the third argument remains in full force ; and is not weakened by this objection.

451. Fourthly : If the soul perish at death, it must be by annihilation ; for death destroys nothing, so far as we know, but what consists of parts. Now we have no evidence of annihilation taking place in any part of the universe. Our bodies, though resolved into dust, are not annihilated ; not a particle of matter has perished since the creation, so far as we know. The destruction of old, and the growth of new, bodies, imply no creation of new matter, nor annihilation of the old, but only a new arrangement of the elementary parts. What reason then can we have to think, that our better part, our soul, will be annihilated at death, when even our bodies are not then annihilated ; and when we have no evidence of such a thing as annihilation ever taking place ? Such an opinion would be a mere hypothesis, unsupported by,

by, nay contrary to, experience ; and therefore cannot be reasonable.—We have then, from reason and the light of nature, sufficient evidence that the soul *may possibly* survive the body, and consequently be immortal ; there being no event before us, so far as we know, except death, which would seem likely to endanger its existence.

452. SECTION II. Does the light of nature afford any reason to believe, that the soul *will actually* survive the body ? The following are reasons for this belief.—First : It is natural for us to think, that the course of things, whereof we have had and now have experience, will continue, unless we have positive reason to believe that it will be altered. This is the ground of many of those opinions, which we account quite certain. That, to-morrow, the sun will rise, and the sea ebb and flow ; that night will follow day, and spring succeed to winter ; and that all men will die ; are opinions amounting to certainty : and yet we cannot account for them otherwise than by saying, that such has been the course

course of nature hitherto, and that we have no reason to think it will be altered. When judgements of this kind admit of no doubt, as in the examples given, our conviction is called Moral Certainty. I am *morally certain*, that the sun will rise to-morrow, and set to-day, and that all men will die, &c. The instances of past experience, on which these judgements are founded, are innumerable; and there is no mixture of such contradictory instances, as might lead us to expect a contrary event.

453. But it often happens, that the experiences on which we ground our opinions of this sort, are but few in number; and sometimes too they are mixed with contradictory experiences. In this case, we do not consider the future event as morally certain; but only as more or less probable (or likely) according to the greater or less surplus of the favourable instances. If, for example, a medicine has cured in five cases, and never failed in one, we should think its future success probable, but not morally certain; still more probable, if it has cured in twenty cases; and more still, if

if in a hundred, without failing in one. If a medicine has cured in ten cases, and failed in ten, our mind in regard to its future success would be in a state of doubt; that is, we should think it as probable that it would fail on a future trial, as that it would succeed. If it had cured ten times, and failed only six, we should think it more probable that it would cure on a future trial, than that it would fail; and still more probable, if it had cured ten times and failed only once.

454. These remarks, which properly belong to Logic, will help to explain, in what manner our judgements are regulated, in regard to the probability or moral certainty of future events. To make us morally certain of a future event requires, we cannot tell how many, but requires a very great number of favourable experiences, without any mixture of unfavourable ones. It is true, we have heard of two men, Enoch and Elijah, who did not die; yet we expect our own death with absolute certainty. But these instances are confessedly miraculous; and, besides, are so very few, compared

compared with the infinite number of instances on the other side, that they make no alteration in our judgement.

455. To apply all this to the present subject. Our bodies just now exist, but we foresee a cause that will destroy them, namely death; and therefore we believe that they will not exist long. Our souls just now exist; but we do not foresee any positive cause that will destroy them: it having been proved, that they *may* survive the body; and there being no cause, so far as we know, that will then, or at any other time, destroy them. We must therefore admit, that our souls *will probably* survive the body. It is natural for us to believe this: the rules of evidence, which determine our belief in similar cases, determine us to this belief. But there are other arguments which prove the same thing by evidence still higher.

456. Secondly: We are conscious of being, in many respects, capable of endless improvement. The more knowledge we acquire, the greater is our capacity and our relish for further acquisitions. It is
not

not so with the brutes ; for such of them as are at all docile soon reach the highest improvement whereof they are capable. Disease may put a stop to our improvement as well as curiosity for a time ; but when it goes off, we are curious and improveable as before. Dotage is a disease ; from which if we could recover, there is reason to think that we should be as rational and ingenious as ever : for there have been instances of recovery from dotage ; and of persons who at the close of life have regained the full use of those faculties of which they had been for several years deprived. And it often happens that old people retain all their mental powers, and their capacity of improvement, to the last.—Now God, being perfect in wisdom, cannot be supposed to bestow upon his creatures useless or superfluous faculties. But this capacity of endless improvement is superfluous, if man be to perish finally at death ; for much more limited powers would have suited all the purposes of a creature whose duration comprehends no more than ninety or a hundred years. It is therefore unreason-

able to suppose, that the soul will perish with the body.

457. Thirdly : The dignity of the human soul, compared with the vital principle of brutes, leads to the same conclusion. Brutes have some faculties in common with us ; but they are guided by instinct chiefly, and incapable of science. Man's arts and his knowledge may be said to be, in one sense, of his own acquisition ; for, independently on experience and information, he can do little and knows nothing. But then, he is improveable, as was just now observed, to an extent to which we can set no bounds. He is, moreover, capable of science ; that is, of discovering the laws of nature, comparing them together, and applying the knowledge of them to the regulation of his conduct and to the enlargement of his power. He has a sense of truth and falsehood, virtue and vice, beauty and deformity. He is impressed with a belief that he is accountable for his conduct. He is endowed with the capacity of knowing, obeying, and adoring his Creator ; on whom he is
sensible

sensible that he and all things depend, and to whom he naturally looks up for protection and comfort; and he expects that his being will not end with this life, but be prolonged through eternity. These are principles and sentiments, whereof the most sagacious brutes are not in any degree susceptible.

458. The instincts, appetites, and faculties, which we have in common with them, are necessary to our existence and well-being as animals. But for what purpose are we endowed with moral and religious principles? These are not necessary to the support of our animal nature; these are useless, or at least fallacious, if there be no future state. To those who attend to the economy and analogies of nature, and observe how nicely every thing is fitted to its end, it must appear incredible, that man should have the same final destiny with the brutes; considering that his mental constitution is so very different, that his capacities are transcendently superior; and that his highest happiness and misery arise from circumstances whereof the brutes feel nothing

3 H 2

thing and know nothing, namely from his virtue and vice, and from his hope of the approbation and fear of the disapprobation of his Creator.

459. Fourthly: We are possessed of many faculties which in the present life are never exerted. This we know to be the case with those who die young or uninstructed, that is, with the greatest part of mankind: and we have reason to think that this is the case in some measure with all; for we seldom prosecute any new study without finding in ourselves powers which we were not conscious of before; and no man, after the greatest attainments in art and science, and at the end of the longest life, could say, that he had exercised all his powers, or knew the full extent of his own capacity. In most men, therefore, we are sure that there are, and in all men we have reason to think that there are, faculties, which are not exerted in this life; and which, by consequence, must be useless if there is no other. But in the works of creation there is nothing useless. Therefore,

fore, the souls of men will exist in a future state.

460. Fifthly : All men have a natural desire and expectation of immortality. The thought of being reduced into nothing is shocking to a rational soul. These hopes and desires are not the effect of education ; for, with a very few exceptions, they are found in all ages and countries. They arise not from self-conceit, or pride, or any extravagant passion ; for the conscience of mankind approves them as innocent, laudable, and right : and they prevail most in those who are most remarkable for virtue, that is, for the moderation and right government of their passions and desires. They must, therefore, take their rise from something in the original frame of human nature : and, if so, their Author is God himself. But is it to be supposed, that he, who is infinitely wise and good, should have inspired his creatures with hopes and wishes, that had nothing in nature to gratify them ? Is it to be supposed, that he should disappoint his creatures, and frustrate those very desires which he has himself

self implanted? The expectation of immortality is one of those things that distinguish man from all other animals. And what an elevating idea does it give us of the dignity of our nature!

461. Sixthly: It is remarkable, that the wisest men in all ages, and the greatest part of mankind in all nations, have believed that the soul will survive the body; how much soever some of them may have figured this belief by vain and incredible fictions. Now here is a singular fact, that deserves our attention. Whence could the universal belief of the soul's immortality arise?—It is true, that all men have believed that the sun and starry heavens revolve about the earth: but this opinion is easily accounted for; being warranted by what seems to be the evidence of sense. It is also true, that most nations have, at one time or other, acknowledged a plurality of gods: but this is a corruption of an original true opinion; for it is highly probable, nay it appears from history, that believing in one God was the more antient opinion, and that polytheism succeeded to it, and was a corruption

corruption of it. Now it is not at all surprising, that when a true opinion is introduced among mankind, it should in ignorant ages be perverted by additional and fabulous circumstances.—But the immortality of the soul is not a corruption of an original true opinion; nor does it derive any support from the evidence of sense. It is itself an original opinion, and the testimony of sense seems rather to declare against it. Whence then could it arise?

462. Not from the artifice of politicians, in order to keep the world in awe, as some have vainly pretended. For there never was a time when all politicians were wise and the rest of mankind fools: there never was a time when all the politicians on earth were of the same opinion, and concurred in carrying on the same design: there never was a time when all politicians thought it their interest to promote opinions so essential to human happiness, and so favourable to virtue, as this of immortality: and in antient times the intercourse between nations was not so open as to permit the universal circulation of this opinion,

nion, if it had been artificial. To which I may add, that mankind have never yet adopted any opinion universally merely upon the authority of either politicians or philosophers.—This opinion, therefore, must have arisen from a natural suggestion of the human understanding, or from a divine revelation communicated to our first parents, and by them transmitted to their posterity. In either case, this opinion will be allowed to be of the most respectable authority; and it is highly absurd and dangerous to reject it, or call it in question.—Another argument is founded upon the unequal distribution of good and evil in the present life. This will be considered by and by.

463. SECTION III. What may be reasonably conjectured concerning a future state?—First: From the wisdom and goodness of God, we may reasonably infer, that it will be governed, like the present, by established laws. What those may be, it is not for us to determine; but we may rest assured, that they will be wise and good.—Secondly: From the different circumstances

circumstances wherein we shall then be placed, and from the different beings with whom we shall then probably have intercourse, it may be inferred, that in a future state we shall be endowed with many new faculties, or at least that many faculties now hidden and unknown will then exert themselves. In our progress from infancy to mature age, our powers are continually improving; and new ones often appear and are exerted. We may therefore expect that the same progression will be continued hereafter.—It is true, we cannot now form any idea of faculties different from those of which we have experience. But this argues nothing against the present conjecture. A man born blind has no notion of seeing, nor has an ignorant man any idea of those operations of the human mind whereby we calculate eclipses, and ascertain the periods of the planets. Yet it would be absurd, in those who want these powers, to deny their reality or possibility.

464. Thirdly: As the future state will be a state of happiness to the good, we may reasonably conjecture, that it will be

a state of society. For we cannot suppose it possible, for such creatures as we are, to be happy in perfect solitude. And if we shall then have any remembrance of present things, which is highly probable, there is reason to hope, and good men have in all ages rejoiced in the hope, that the virtuous will then know and converse with those friends, with whom they have been intimately connected in this world. This, we cannot but think, will be an addition to their happiness. But painful remembrances of every kind will probably be obliterated for ever.

465. Fourthly : The future state will be a state of retribution ; that is, of reward to the good and of punishment to the wicked. This is intimated by many considerations ; which prove, not only that a future state, if there be one, will be a state of retribution, but prove also, that there will be a future state. Vice deserves punishment, and virtue reward* : this is

* In what respects virtue is meritorious, will be considered in the second volume.

clear

clear from the dictates of reason and conscience. In the present life, however, the wicked sometimes meet with less punishment than they deserve, while the virtuous are often distressed and disappointed. But, under the government of Him, who is infinitely good and just, who cannot be mistaken, and whose purposes it is impossible to frustrate, this will not finally be the case; and every man must at last receive according to his works.

466. Further: Good men have a natural hope, and wicked men a natural fear, in consequence of what they expect in the life to come. Those hopes and fears result from the intimations of conscience, declaring the merits of virtue and the demerits of vice. And therefore, as it is impossible for us to believe, that the dictates of conscience, our supreme faculty, are delusive or irrational, we must believe, that there is future evil to be feared by the wicked, and future good to be expected by the righteous. Even in this life there are signs of a retribution begun: whence we learn, that we are subject to the moral

government of God, and that things have a tendency to retribution. Certain virtues, as temperance and industry, are frequently their own reward, and the opposite vices seldom fail to bring along with them their own punishment. Nay sometimes, even here, the wicked are overtaken with judgements of so peculiar a kind, that we cannot help ascribing them to a just Providence. But the retribution here begun is not perfect. Perfect, however, under the government of a just and almighty Being, it must be in the end. And therefore, there will be a future state of most righteous retribution.

467. Fifthly : In a future life, the virtuous will make continual improvements in virtue and knowledge, and consequently in happiness. This may be inferred, from the progressive nature of the human mind, to which length of time, properly employed, never fails to bring an increase of knowledge and virtue even in this world ; and from the nature of the future state itself, in which we cannot suppose, that any cross accidents will ever interfere to prevent

prevent virtue from attaining happiness, its natural consequence and reward.

468. Lastly : In the future state, virtue shall prevail over vice, and happiness over misery. This must be the final result of things, under the government of a Being who is infinitely good, powerful, and wise. Even in this life, virtue tends to confer power as well as happiness : many nations of vicious men might be subdued by one nation of good men. There is hardly an instance on record of a people losing their liberty while they retained their virtue ; but many are the instances of mighty nations falling, when their virtue was lost, an easy prey to the enemy. In this life, the natural tendency of virtue to confer superiority is obstructed in various ways. Here, all virtue is imperfect ; the wicked, it is to be feared, are the most numerous ; the virtuous cannot always know one another ; and, tho' they could, many accidents may prevent their union. But these causes extend not their influence beyond the grave ; and therefore, in a future

ture state, happiness and virtue must triumph, and vice and misery be borne down.

469. This is a very brief account indeed, of the arguments that human reason, unaided by revelation, could furnish, for the immortality of the soul. All taken together amount to such a high probability as can hardly be resisted by any rational being. Yet we must acknowledge, that unassisted reason makes this matter only in a very high degree probable. It is the Gospel, which makes it certain; and which, therefore, may with truth be said to have BROUGHT LIFE AND IMMORTALITY TO LIGHT.

THE END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

E R R A T A.

Page 50. line 2. read hinted at.

60. — 21. — passive participle,
208. — 12. — for the better or for the worse,
241. — 3. — § 190.
246. — 24. — of much or little knowledge,
255. — 6. — following arrangement
379. — 5. — as a first
381. — 13. — must have acted
414. — 19. — made to appear,

**NON
CIRCULATING**

IF YOU DO NOT HAVE A UM. STUDENT
OR LIBRARY I.D. BADGE, PRINT HERE

NAME

RBR

11-29-76

STREET
ADDRESS

CITY _____ MICHIGAN

PHONE _____ ZIP
CODE _____

IF FACULTY OR STAFF?

DEPARTMENT _____

POSITION:

I D
NUMBER

0009999784

063076

USE FOR BOOKS WITHOUT A
PRE-PUNCHED BOOK CARD.

WITH PLASTIC ID FILL IN
BOLD AREAS ONLY. PRESS HARD.

AUTHOR

Brathie, James

TITLE

Elements of moral

science. Edinburgh,

changed 11-7-77

1 w/ Circulation also (BAM)

LIBRARY

CALL NUMBER

*

8513

1006 1403

831

1353

